

HISTORICAL ATLAS

OF

AUGUSTA COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

MAPS FROM ORIGINAL SURVEYS,

BY JED. HOTCHKISS, Top. Eng.

ITS ANNALS,

BY JOSEPH A. WADDELL.

PHYSIOGRAPHY.

BY JED. HOTCHKISS, C. & M. E.

ILLUSTRATED.

CHICAGO, ILL.:
WATERMAN, WATKINS & CO.
1888.

HISTORICAL ATLAS

The reproduction of this book has been made possible through the sponsorship of the Augusta County Historical Society, Staunton, Virginia.

AUGUSTA COUNTY

VIRGINIA

MAPS OF ORIGINAL SURVEYS

1783-1800

ITS ANNALS

BY JOSEPH A. WARD

PHYSIOGRAPHY

BY JED HOTCHKISS, C. E. & M. E.



CHICAGO, ILL.
WATKINS & CO.
1936

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

HISTORICAL.

CHAPTER I.	
FROM THE FIRST SETTLEMENT TO THE FIRST COUNTY COURT	PAGE. 5
CHAPTER II.	
FROM THE FIRST COURT TO THE FIRST INDIAN WAR	7
CHAPTER III.	
INDIAN WARS, ETC., FROM 1753 TO 1775	8
CHAPTER IV.	
THE WAR OF THE REVOLUTION, ETC., FROM 1774 TO 1783	9
CHAPTER V.	
FROM THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION TO THE YEAR 1812	15
CHAPTER VI.	
FROM THE YEAR 1812 TO THE YEAR 1860	17
CHAPTER VII.	
AUGUSTA COUNTY DURING THE LATE WAR	21
BESSIE BELL AND MARY GRAY	26
LIST OF AUGUSTA MEN WHO SERVED IN THE FIELD AS CAPTAINS, MAJORS, ETC., IN THE CONFEDERATE ARMY	27
CHURCHES IN AUGUSTA COUNTY	27
POST OFFICES IN AUGUSTA COUNTY	28
VOTING PLACES IN AUGUSTA COUNTY	28
AUGUSTA FEMALE SEMINARY, STAUNTON	28
STAUNTON FEMALE SEMINARY	28
WESLEYAN FEMALE INSTITUTE	28
VIRGINIA FEMALE INSTITUTE	28
STAUNTON MALE ACADEMY	28
AUGUSTA MALE ACADEMY	28
STATISTICS FROM UNITED STATES CENSUS OF 1880	29
PUBLIC OFFICERS OF THE COUNTY AND CITY IN 1884	29

PHYSIOGRAPHY.

I.—POSITION AND GENERAL RELATIONS	30
II.—EXTENT AND CHARACTER OF SURFACE	30
III.—THE WATERS OF AUGUSTA COUNTY	31
IV.—GEOLOGY, MINERALOGY, ETC	32
V.—METEOROLOGY	35
VI.—ANIMAL AND VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS	35
VII.—THE PEOPLE	36

BIOGRAPHICAL.

CYRUS HALL McCORMICK	37
REV. FRANCIS McFARLAND, D.D.	41
FRANCIS BROWN AND HIS DESCENDANTS	41
GEORGE AND JOHN SEAWRIGHT	41
J. A. PATTERSON, JR.	42
REV. DANIEL YOUNT	42
SAMUEL YOUNT	42
JOHN T. SMITH	43
COL. HAZEL J. WILLIAMS	43
JOHN BROWN	43
CAPT. C. B. COINER	43
JOHN W. FAUVER	44
DABNEY C. RAMSEY	44
GEO. C. MISH	44
ISAAC COFFMAN	44
SAMUEL CARRELL	44
GEORGE W. FAUBER	44
A. H. KENDIG	44
THE PATTERSON FAMILY	44
THE KERR AND DUNLAP FAMILIES	45
ROBERT C. DUNLAP	45
B. F. SMITH	45
HENRY B. SEIGG	45
THOMAS SCOTT HOGSHEAD	45
ENOS OTT	46
JAMES SHIELDS HAWPE	46
JOHN W. LANDES	46
JOHN H. SELLING	46
McCORKLE BROS.	46
T. F. HOY	46
J. FRANK CLEMMER	46
WALNUT GROVE STOCK FARM	46
JOHN W. FAUVER	46
BUMGARDNER & McQUAIDE	47

ILLUSTRATIONS.

AUGUSTA COUNTY COURT HOUSE	PAGE. facing 8
AUGUSTA FEMALE SEMINARY	" 28
" MALE ACADEMY	between 28-29
" NATIONAL BANK	facing 12
AUGUSTA CHURCH	" 26
RESIDENCE CYRUS BROWN	between 78-79
" JOHN BROWN	facing 48
BUSINESS HOUSE OF BUMGARDNER & McQUAIDE	47
CYCLOPEAN TOWERS	19
RESIDENCE CAPT. C. B. COINER	facing 24
" ISAAC COFFMAN	between 86-87
" SAMUEL CARROLL	facing 20
" AND DISTILLERY OF J. FRANK CLEMMER	between 44-45
R. B. DUNLAP, PROPERTY OF	78-79
RESIDENCE R. H. DUDLEY	between 82-83
" DR. A. M. FAUNTEROY	facing 16
" JOHN W. FAUVER	facing 16
" GEO. W. FAUBER	between 82-83
PORTRAIT REV. J. HENDREN	facing 40
RESIDENCE THE LATE REV. J. HENDREN	between 40-41
" JUDGE JOHN HENDREN	" 40-41
" T. S. HOGSHEAD	facing 24
" J. S. HAWPE	between 66-67
" T. F. HOY	" 74-75
" H. A. S. HAMILTON	" 74-75
" JNO. E. HAMILTON	" 82-83
PROPERTY H. H. HANGER	" 82-83
RESIDENCE D. A. KAYSER	facing 16
" A. H. KENDIG	between 74-75
" JOHN W. LANDES	" 82-83
PORTRAIT OF C. H. McCORMICK	37
McCORMICK HARVESTER AND TWINE BINDER	38
McCORMICK HARVESTING MACHINE CO'S WORKS—CHICAGO	33
McCORMICK FAMILY—HOMESTEAD OF	facing 40
RESIDENCE J. N. McFARLAND	" 32
" GEO. C. MISH	between 82-83
" ADAM McCHESNEY	" 70-71
PROPERTY OF J. S. McCORKLE	facing 20
RESIDENCE ENOS OTT	between 74-75
" CAPT. G. JULIAN PRATT	" 74-75
J. A. PATTERSON'S JR., ROLLER FLOURING MILL	" 74-75
RESIDENCE C. S. PATTERSON	" 86-87
" D. C. RAMSEY	" 66-67
" J. M. H. RANDOLPH	" 82-83
" JOHN SEAWRIGHT	" 66-67
" JOHN T. SMITH	facing 24
" HON. A. H. STUART	" 26
" GEO. SEAWRIGHT	between 28-29
" JOHN T. SHIELDS	" 44-45
" JOHN H. SELLING	facing 20
" BENJ. F. SMITH	" 32
" HENRY B. SIEG	" 48
STAUNTON MALE ACADEMY	" 8
RESIDENCE MAJ. W. M. TATE	" 24
" H. J. WILLIAMS	between 66-67
" J. M. YATES	" 82-83
" DANIEL YOUNT	" 44-45
" SAMUEL YOUNT	" 44-45

MAPS.

UNITED STATES	50-51
VIRGINIA AND WEST VIRGINIA	54-55
GEOLOGICAL MAP	58-59
AUGUSTA COUNTY—OUTLINE MAP	61
BEVERLEY MANOR DISTRICT	64-65
SOUTH RIVER DISTRICT	68-69
RIVER HEADS DISTRICT	72-73
MIDDLE RIVER DISTRICT	76-77
NORTH RIVER DISTRICT	80-81
THE PASTURES	84-85
STAUNTON	88-89
MOUNT SIDNEY TOWN	77
NEW HOPE	77
CHURCHVILLE	91
MOUNT SOLON	91
SANGERVILLE	91
CENTERVILLE	91
WAYNESBORO	92-93
SPRING HILL	94
FISHERSVILLE	94
CRAIGSVILLE	94
MIDDLEBROOK	94

ANNALS OF AUGUSTA COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

BY JOS. A. WADDELL.

CHAPTER I.

FROM THE FIRST SETTLEMENT TO THE FIRST COUNTY COURT.

AS far as known, the country now embraced in Augusta county was never visited or seen by white men before the year 1716. This portion of the Valley of Virginia was then entirely uninhabited. The Shawnee Indians had a settlement in the lower valley, at or near Winchester, and parties of that tribe frequently traversed this section on hunting excursions, or on warlike expeditions against Southern tribes; but there was no Indian village or wigwam within the present limits of the county. At an earlier day, Indians had doubtless resided here, as would appear from several ancient mounds, or burial places, still existing in the county. [See Peyton's History of Augusta County, page 7.]

The face of the country between the Blue Ridge and the North Mountain, was, of course, diversified by hill and dale, as it is now; but forest trees were less numerous than at the present time, the growth of timber being prevented by the frequent fires kindled by hunting parties of Indians. Old men living within the writer's recollection, described this region as known by them in their boyhood. Many acres, now stately forests, were then covered by mere brushwood, which did not conceal the startled deer flying from pursuit.

At the time of which we speak, wild animals abounded in this section. The buffalo roamed at will over these hills and valleys, and in their migrations made a well-defined trail between Rockfish Gap, in the Blue Ridge, and Buffalo Gap, in the North Mountain, passing by the present site of Staunton. Other denizens of the region at that day were the bear, wolf, panther, wild cat, deer, fox, hare, etc. It would appear that wolves were very numerous.

The first passage of the Blue Ridge and discovery of the valley by white men, was made by Governor Spotswood, in 1716. About the last of July or first of August in that year, the governor, with some members of his staff, starting from Williamsburg, proceeded to Germanna, a small frontier settlement, where he left his coach and took to horse. He was there joined by the rest of his party, gentlemen and their retainers, a company of rangers, and four Meherrin Indians, comprising in all about fifty persons. These with pack-horses laden with provisions, journeyed by way of the upper Rappahannock river, and after thirty-six days from the date of their departure from Williamsburg, on September 5th, scaled the mountain,

at Swift Run Gap, it is believed. Descending the western side of the mountain into the valley, they reached the Shenandoah River and encamped on its bank. Proceeding up the river, they found a place where it was fordable, crossed it, and here on the western bank, the governor formally "took possession for King George the First of England." The rangers made further explorations up the valley, while the governor, with his immediate attendants, returned to Williamsburg, arriving there after an absence of about eight weeks, and having traveled about 440 miles out and back.

It was in commemoration of this famous expedition that Governor Spotswood sought to establish the order of "Knights of the Golden Horseshoe."

The country thus discovered by Governor Spotswood, and claimed by him for the British crown, became a part of the county of Essex, the western boundary being undefined. Spotsylvania was formed from Essex and other counties in 1720, and Orange from Spotsylvania, in 1734.

The expedition of the "Knights of the Golden Horseshoe," trivial as it may now appear, was at the time regarded as very hazardous; and it no doubt led to important results. The glowing accounts given by Spotswood and his followers of the beauty and fertility of the valley, attracted immediate attention, and induced hunters and other enterprising men to visit the country. Of such transient excursions, however, we have no authentic account; and at least sixteen years were to pass before any European located in this region.

At length John and Isaac Vanmeter, of Pennsylvania, obtained from Governor Gooch a warrant for 40,000 acres of land to be located in the lower valley, and within the present counties of Frederick, Jefferson, etc. This warrant was sold by the grantees to Joist Hite, also of Pennsylvania. Hite proceeded to make locations of his land, and to induce immigrants to settle on his grant. He removed his family to Virginia, in 1732, and fixed his residence a few miles south of the present town of Winchester, which is believed to have been the first permanent settlement by white men in the valley.

Population soon flowed in to take possession of the rich lands offered by Hite; but a controversy speedily arose in regard to the proprietor's title. Lord Fairfax claimed Hite's lands as a part of his grant of the "Northern Neck." The dispute retarded the settlement of that part of the valley,

and induced immigrants to push their way up the Shenandoah river to regions not implicated in such disputes.

A strange uncertainty has existed as to the date and some of the circumstances of the first settlement of Augusta county. Campbell, in his "History of Virginia" (pages 427-9), undertakes to relate the events somewhat minutely, but falls into obvious mistakes. He says: "Shortly after the first settlement of Winchester (1738), John Marlin, a peddler, and John Salling, a weaver, two adventurous spirits, set out from that place" (Winchester) "to explore the 'upper country,' then almost unknown." They came up the valley of the Shenandoah, called Sherando, crossed James river, and reached the Roanoke river, where a party of Cherokee Indians surprised and captured Salling, while Marlin escaped. Salling was detained by the Indians for six years, and on being liberated returned to Williamsburg. "About the same time," says Campbell, "a considerable number of immigrants had arrived there, among them John Lewis and John Mackey. * * Pleased with Salling's glowing picture of the country beyond the mountains, Lewis and Mackey visited it under his guidance," and immediately all three located here.

Whatever the truth may be in regard to other matters, Campbell's dates are entirely erroneous. He would seem to postpone the settlement of Lewis in the valley to the year 1744, although he immediately refers to him as residing here in 1736.

Foote, in his "Sketches of Virginia," is silent as to the date of the settlement. He mentions, upon the authority of the late Charles A. Stuart, of Greenbrier county, a descendant of John Lewis, that the latter first located on the left bank of Middle river, then called Carthrae's river, about three miles east of the macadamized turnpike. Thence he removed to Lewis' Creek, two miles east of Staunton, where he built a stone house, known as Fort Lewis, which is still standing. According to Foote, Mackey and Salling came with Lewis, or at the same time, Mackey making his residence at Buffalo Gap, and Salling his at the forks of James river, below the Natural Bridge.

Peyton, in his "History of Augusta County," gives an account of the coming of Lewis to the valley quite different from Campbell's version of the matter, and somewhat at variance with Foote's narrative. He says Lewis "had been some time in America, when, in 1732, Joist Hite and a party of

pioneers set out to settle upon a grant of 40,000 acres of land in the valley. * * Lewis joined this party, came to the valley, and was the first white settler of Augusta." Lewis is represented as coming, not from Williamsburg, but from Lancaster, Pennsylvania, and the date of his arrival here is given as "the summer of 1732." These statements and the authority upon which they are made appear conclusive of the matter.

John Lewis and his sturdy sons were just the men to battle with the adverse circumstances which surrounded them in this wilderness country. He was a native of Donegal county, Province of Ulster, Ireland, and of Scottish descent. He came to America from Portugal, in which country he had taken refuge after a bloody affray with an oppressive landlord in Ireland. It is stated, however, that upon an investigation of the affray, Lewis was formally pronounced free from blame. When he came to the valley he had four sons—Samuel, Thomas, Andrew and William. A fifth son, Charles, was born after the settlement here. We shall have occasion to speak of all these in the course of our narrative.

The permanent settlement of Lewis was in the vicinity of the twin hills, "Betsy Bell and Mary Gray," which were so called by him, or some other early settler, after two similar hills in County Tyrone, Ireland.

Concurrently with the settlement of Lewis, or immediately afterward, a flood of immigrants poured into the country. There was no landlord or proprietor to parcel out the domain; the land was all before them where to choose, and for several years the settlers helped themselves to homes without let or hindrance. The Colonial government encouraged the settlement of the valley as a means of protecting the lower country from Indian incursions. The settlers were almost exclusively of the Scotch-Irish race, natives of the north of Ireland, but of Scottish ancestry. Most of those who came during the first three or four decades were Dissenters from the Church of England, of the Presbyterian faith, and victims in some degree of religious persecution in their native land. They were generally a profoundly religious people, bringing the Bible with them, whatever they had to leave behind, and as soon as possible erected log meeting houses in which to assemble for the worship of God, with school houses hard by.

Although the Church of England was established by law throughout the colony, and a spirit of intolerance inseparable from such a system prevailed in lower Virginia, the Dissenters of the valley, as far as we know, had little or nothing to complain of in this respect.

For about twenty years the immigrants were unmolested by the Indians. "Some," says Foote, "who had known war in Ireland, lived and died in that peace in this wilderness for which their hearts had longed in their native land." During this halcyon time, the young Lewises, McClanahans, Matthews, Campbells and others were growing up and maturing for many a desperate encounter and field of battle.

But the authorities at Williamsburg had by no means relinquished the rights of the British crown, as held by them, to the paramount title to the lands of the valley. In assertion of those rights, and without ability on the part of the people of the valley to resist, on September 6, 1736, William Gooch, "Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-Chief of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia," in pursuance of an order in council, dated August 12, 1736, and in the name of "George II, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, etc." issued a patent for the "Manor of Beverley." The patentees were Wil-

liam Beverley, of Essex; Sir John Randolph, of Williamsburg; Richard Randolph, of Henrico, and John Robinson, of King and Queen; and the grant was of 118,491 acres of land lying "in the county of Orange, between the great mountains, on the river Sherando," etc. (See Peyton's History, page 62, for the patent at length.) On the next day, September 17, the other grantees released their interest in the patent to Beverley. This patent embraced a large part of the present county of Augusta, south as well as north of Staunton.

The question is often asked, In what part of the county was Beverley's manor? Readers generally could not ascertain from a perusal of the patent, and we have applied to several practical surveyors, the best authorities on the subject, for information. To Messrs. John G. Stover and James H. Callison we are indebted for the following description, which, although not perfectly accurate, will answer the present purpose: Beginning at a point on the east side of South river, about four miles below Waynesborough, thence up the same side of the river to a point opposite to or above Greenville; thence by several lines west or southwest to a point near Summerdean; thence northeast to Trimble's, three miles south of Swoope's Depot; thence northeast by several lines, crossing the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike, five or six miles, and the Churchville road about three miles, from Staunton, to a point not known to the writer; and thence east by one or more lines, crossing the macadamized turnpike at or near Augusta church, to the beginning. The description given in the patent begins at five white oaks on a narrow point between Christie's creek and Beaver run (Long Meadow's creek), near the point where those streams enter Middle river, and thence north seventy degrees; west, etc.

From the familiar mention in the patent of various natural features of the country—"Christie's creek," "Beaver run," "the Great Springs," "Black Spring," etc., it is evident that the country had by that time, in the short space of four years, been explored and to a great extent settled. The grant, of course, covered the lands already occupied by settlers, who were in the view of the law and of the patentee, mere "squatters" on the public domain. Beverley, however, seems to have dealt towards the people with a liberal spirit; at any rate, there is no proof or tradition of anything to the contrary. On February 21, 1738, he conveyed to John Lewis 2,071 acres, a part of the Beverley Manor grant, the deed being on record in Orange county, within which the grant then lay.

In the spring of 1736, Benjamin Borden, the agent of Lord Fairfax, came up from Williamsburg, by invitation, on a visit to John Lewis. He took with him, on his return, a buffalo calf, which he presented to Governor Gooch, and was so successful in ingratiating himself with the governor as to receive the royal patent for a large body of land in the valley, south of Beverley Manor. The first settlers in Borden's grant were Ephraim McDowell and his family. His daughter, Mary Greenlee, related in a deposition taken in 1806, and still extant, the circumstances under which her father went there. Her brother, James McDowell, had come into Beverley Manor during the spring of 1736, and planted a crop of corn, near Woods' Gap; and in the fall her father, then a very aged man, her brother John, and her husband and herself came to occupy the new settlement. Before they reached their destination, and after they had arranged their camp on a certain evening, Borden arrived and asked permission to spend the night with them. He informed them of his grant, and offered them inducements to go there. The next day they came on to the house of John Lewis, and there it was finally arranged that the party should settle in Borden's tract.

As early as 1734, Michael Woods, an Irish immigrant, with three sons and three sons-in-law, came up the valley, and pushing his way through Woods' Gap, settled on the eastern side of the Blue Ridge.

Beverley and Borden were indefatigable in introducing settlers from Europe. James Patton was a very efficient agent in this enterprise. He was a native of Ireland, was bred to the sea and had served in the royal navy. Afterward he became the owner of "a passenger ship," and traded to Hobbes' Hole, Virginia, on the Rappahannock river. He is said to have crossed the Atlantic twenty-five times, bringing Irish immigrants, and returning with cargoes of peltries and tobacco. [R. A. Brock, "Dinwiddie Papers," vol. 1, page 8.] Most of the people introduced by Patton were the class known as "Redemptioners," or "indentured servants," who served a stipulated time to pay the cost of their transportation. The records of the county court of Augusta show that this class of people were numerous in the county previous to the revolutionary war. They were sold and treated as slaves for the time being. Up to the revolution, there were comparatively few African slaves in the valley.

Missionaries, says Foote, speedily followed the immigrants into the valley. "A supplication from the people of Beverley Manor, in the back parts of Virginia," was laid before the Presbytery of Donegal, Pa., September 2, 1737, requesting ministerial supplies. "The presbytery judge it not expedient, for several reasons, to supply them this winter." The next year, however, the Rev. James Anderson was sent by the synod of Philadelphia to intercede with Governor Gooch in behalf of the Presbyterians of Virginia. Mr. Anderson visited the settlements in the valley, and during that year, 1738, at the house of John Lewis, preached the first regular sermon ever delivered in this section of the country.

Up to the time to which we have now arrived, the whole region west of the Blue Ridge constituted a part of the county of Orange. In the year 1738, however, on November 1, the General Assembly of the colony of Virginia passed an act establishing the counties of Frederick and Augusta. The new counties were so named in honor of Frederick Prince of Wales, son of King George II, and father of George III, and his wife, the Princess Augusta. The act separated all the territory west of the Blue Ridge, and extending in other directions "to the utmost limits of Virginia," from Orange county, and erected it into the two counties named. The line between them was "from the head spring of Hedgeman's river to the head spring of the river Potomack." Augusta was much the larger of the two counties. It embraced, northward, the present county of Rockingham and a part of Page; to the south, it extended to the border of Virginia; and to the west and northwest, it extended over the whole territory claimed by Great Britain in those quarters. It included nearly all of West Virginia, the States of Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, and, as contended by Virginians, a part of western Pennsylvania.

The act provided that the two new counties should remain part of the county of Orange and parish of Saint Mark until it should be made to appear to the governor and council that there was "a sufficient number of inhabitants for appointing justices of the peace and other officers, and erecting courts therein." In the meanwhile, the inhabitants were exempted from "the payment of all public, county and parish levies in the county of Orange and parish of Saint Mark"; but no allowance should be made "to any person for killing wolves within the limits of the said new counties." The act further provided for the payment of all levies and officers' fees "in money, or tobacco at

three farthings per pound," and also for the election, by freeholders and housekeepers, of twelve persons in each county, to constitute the vestries of the respective parishes, as required by the laws relating to the established church. As we shall see, the county of Augusta was not fully organized and started on its independent career till the year 1745.

The Presbyterians of Augusta continued their "supplications" to the Presbytery of Donegal, for a pastor to reside amongst them. In 1739, they first applied for the services of the Rev. Mr. Thompson, who came and preached for a time. Next they presented a call to the Rev. John Craig, at a meeting of presbytery, in September, 1740, "Robert Doag (Doak) and Daniel Demison, from Virginia, declared in the name of the congregation of Shenandoah, their adherence to the call formerly presented to Mr. Craig;" and on the next day, Mr. Craig "was set apart for the work of the gospel ministry in the south part of Beverley's Manor."

The Rev. John Craig was born in 1709, in County Antrim, Ireland. He was educated at Edinburgh; landed at New Castle upon the Delaware, August 17, 1734; and licensed by the presbytery to preach, in 1737. As stated, he came to Augusta in 1740, "I was sent," he recorded, "to a new settlement in Virginia of our own people, near three hundred miles distant."

At his death, in 1774, Mr. Craig left a manuscript giving some account of himself and the times in which he lived. Referring to his settlement in Augusta, he says: "The place was a new settlement, without a place of worship, or any church order, a wilderness in the proper sense, and a few Christian settlers in it with numbers of the heathens traveling among us, but generally civil, though some persons were murdered by them about that time. They march about in small companies from fifteen to twenty, sometimes more or less. They must be supplied at any house they call at, with victuals, or they become their own stewards and cooks, and spare nothing they choose to eat and drink."

The inhabitants of the new county discovered before long that living without payment of taxes was not desirable. Poor people could not be provided for; roads could not be cleared, nor bridges built; and, especially, the wolves were multiplying beyond all endurance. They, therefore, made "humble suit" to the assembly, and, in accordance with their wishes, in May, 1742, an act was passed "for laying a tax on the inhabitants of Augusta county." The act provided that the County Court of Orange, should divide the county of Augusta into precincts, and appoint persons to take lists of tithables therein; and that each tithable should pay two shillings (33½ cents) yearly, to James Patton, John Christian and John Buchanan, to be laid out by them in hiring persons to kill wolves, etc., etc., in such manner as should be directed by the court-martial to be held annually in the county.

What the people had to sell, and where they sold their products, are questions we cannot answer. Probably peltries and such live-stock as they could raise and send to market, were their only means of obtaining money.

The state of the country and of society in the settlement, from its origin till the year 1745, was quite singular. The dwellings of the people were generally constructed of logs, and the furniture was simple and scanty. There were no roads worthy of the name, and probably no wheeled vehicles of any kind; horseback was the only means of transportation. There was no minister of religion till Mr. Craig arrived, except transient visitors on two or three occasions; no marriage feasts nor funeral rites, and very few sermons on

the sabbath to call the people together. There were no courts and court days, except at Orange C. H., beyond the mountain. One of John Lewis's sons, William, studied medicine at Philadelphia, and was probably the first educated physician who resided in the county. No lawyer was known in this bailiwick till 1745, when we find Gabriel Jones, the "king's attorney," residing on his estate near Port Republic. But the sturdy Scotch-Irish people pressed into the country; and by the year 1745, the Alexanders, Allens, Andersons, Bells, Breckenridges, Browns, Buchanans, Campbells, Christians, Dickinsons, Doaks, Kerrs, Lewises, Lyles, Matthews, McClanahans, McClungs, McDowells, Pattons, Pilsons, Poages, Prestons, Robinsons, Scotts, Stuarts, Tates, Thompsons, Trimbles, Wilsons and others, abounded in the settlement.

CHAPTER II.

FROM THE FIRST COURT TO THE FIRST INDIAN WAR.

AT length the time for the organization of the county had arrived. On October 30, 1745, Governor Gooch issued "a Commission of the Peace," naming the first magistrates for the county, viz: James Patton, John Lewis, John Buchanan, George Robinson, Peter Scholl, James Bell, Robert Campbell, John Brown, Robert Poage, John Pickens, Thomas Lewis, Hugh Thompson, Robert Cunningham, John Tinla, (Finley?) Richard Woods, John Christian, Robert Craven, James Kerr, Adam Dickenson, Andrew Pickens, and John Anderson—in all twenty-one.

At the same time, the governor issued a commission to James Patton, as sheriff of the county. John Madison was appointed clerk of the county court, by "commission under the hand and seal of Thomas Nelson, Esq., Secretary of Virginia;" and Thomas Lewis was commissioned surveyor of the county, by "William Dawson, president, and the masters of the college of William and Mary."

In anticipation of the organization, William Beverley, the patentee, had erected a court-house, no doubt a rough structure, on his land, and very near, if not on, the site of the present court-house. On the day the commissions to the county officers were issued at Williamsburg, Beverley wrote from the same place to the justices of Augusta, informing them that he had erected the house referred to, at his "mill place," and would before spring make a deed for the "house and two acres of land about the same, to the use of the county, to build their prison, stocks, etc., on." It will be observed that nothing was said about Staunton as the county-seat. There were doubtless some dwellings and other houses here; but the spot was then only known as Beverley's "Mill Place."

The justices appointed by the governor assembled at the court-house on December 9, 1745, and took the prescribed oaths of office. Next, the commission of the sheriff was read, and he was duly qualified. Thereupon, "court was proclaimed," the following justices being on the bench: John Lewis, John Brown, Thomas Lewis, Robert Cunningham, Peter Scholl, John Pickens, Hugh Thompson, James Kerr and Adam Dickenson.

Thus was started the County Court of Augusta, which continued without material change till the year 1852, when justices of the peace became elective by the popular vote. Previously, during a period of one hundred and seven years, the justices assembled in court nominated new members from time to time, as the exigencies of the county required, and the executive of the colony, and afterwards of the state, confirmed the nominations by issuing the necessary commissions.

The justices received no pay, except that after a time the system was introduced of conferring the office of high sheriff of the county, for a term of two years, upon the Justices in rotation, according to seniority of commission; the sheriffs "farming out" the office to deputies who discharged all its duties. Upon the expiration of the term of office, the high sheriffs reverted to the position of justice of the peace, and awaited their turn for the lucrative office, which, however, very few obtained a second time.

The first business in order after the Justices took their seats on the bench and the court was proclaimed, was to receive and approve the official bond of the sheriff. The clerk was also qualified; and William Russel, James Porteus, Gabriel Jones, John Quin, and Thomas Chew, qualified to practice as attorneys-at-law.

On the next day, December 10, the commissions of Thomas Lewis, surveyor, and his deputy, James Trimble, were produced in court, and those officers were sworn in. The sheriff on the same day, "moved the court to be informed how he was to secure his prisoners, there being no prison." Col. Beverley had not thought of that. The court, however ordered the sheriff to summon a guard, and "to provide, shackles, bolts, handcuffs, etc." A committee was also appointed to "build a prison and erect stocks." Great importance was evidently attached in those days to "stocks." It was thought quite impossible for a well-ordered community to get along without them.

After a short session on the 10th, the court adjourned till the next court in turn. In pursuance of the Act of 1738, the court then met on the second Monday in each month.

The business of the county court, as indicated by the order books, was heavy and diversified. The first session of court was held, as stated, in December, 1745, and by the February term following, there was a large docket of causes for trial. Single justices had jurisdiction of causes involving less than twenty-five shillings. In all other causes at law and in equity, civil and criminal, (not including loss of life or member), the court had jurisdiction, there being, however, a right of appeal to the general court, which was then composed of the governor and his council. Attendance at the county court every month became burdensome to the people, and in October, 1748, an act of assembly was passed, establishing quarterly courts for the trial of causes. Four or more justices were required to constitute a court.

We may mention that the first clerk of the county court, John Madison, was the father of the Rev. Dr. William Madison, for some time bishop of the Episcopal church in Virginia. He and Gabriel Jones, the lawyer, lived in the same neighborhood, near Port Republic.

The first will presented in the county court of Augusta was that of Robert Wilson. It was executed November 3, 1745, and was proved and admitted to record February 11, 1746, not 1745, as the record is made to say by a blundering copyist.

The first deed recorded, dated December 9, 1745, was from Andrew Pickens to William McPheeters, and conveyed twelve and one-half acres of land in consideration of five shillings. Deed books 1, 2 and 3 are occupied almost exclusively by the conveyances of William Beverley to various persons.

Beverley no doubt made many deeds previous to 1745, which were recorded in Orange; and from 1745 to 1755, no less than one hundred and sixty-six of his deeds were recorded in Augusta. He never conveyed the two acres promised to the justices, in 1745; but in 1749 he donated much more land to the county, as we shall see.

From the papers in an early suit we have ascertained the prices in the county of several articles in the year 1745. Money was then, and for long

afterward, counted in pounds, shillings and pence, one pound, Virginia currency, being \$3.33½. We state the prices here in the present currency. The price of sugar was 16½ cents per pound, two nutmegs 22 cents, half a pound of powder 33½ cents, one and a half pounds of lead 19½ cents, and one ounce of indigo 25 cents.

The "rates for ordinaries fixed by" the court March 10, 1746, were as follows: For a hot diet 12½ cents, a cold ditto 8½ cents, lodging with clean sheets 4 1-6 cents, stabling and fodder a night 8½ cents, rum the gallon \$1.50, whiskey the gallon \$1, claret the quart 83½ cents.

The ordinary proceedings of the county court, as recorded in the order books, often illustrate the history of the times, and we shall make frequent quotations.

As soon as the court was established, taverns were needed at the county seat. Therefore, we find that on February 12, 1746, license to keep ordinaries at the court-house were granted to Robert McClanahan and John Hutchinson. And the same day it was "ordered that any attorney interrupting another at the bar, or speaking when he is not employed, forfeit five shillings."

On February 19, 1746, a court was held to receive proof of "public claims," and the losses of several persons by the Indians were proved and ordered to be certified to the general assembly for allowance.

At the April term of the same year, John Nicholas having declined to act as prosecuting attorney, the court recommended Gabriel Jones "as a fit person to transact his majesty's affairs in this county." Mr. Jones was accordingly appointed, and duly qualified at the next court.

At May term, 1746, John Preston proved his importation from Ireland, with his wife, Elizabeth, William, his son, and Lettice and Ann, his daughters, at his own charge, "in order to partake of his majesty's bounty for taking up land."

Footnote speaks of John Preston as "a shipmaster in Dublin." Brock says he was a ship carpenter. He came to the county in the year 1740, with his brother-in-law, James Patton, who was a brother of Preston's wife. He located at first on a farm called Spring Hill, on South river, above Waynesborough, but about the year 1743, he acquired the tract known as Spring Farm, adjacent to Staunton, and there, in a house near the site of the present city water works, he afterward lived and died. He and other Presbyterian people of Staunton and vicinity, of his day, worshipped at Tinkling Spring church, and his body was interred at that place. His eldest daughter married Robert Breckenridge, the ancestor of several distinguished men. The second daughter married the Rev. John Brown, pastor of New Providence church, and from them descended John Brown, of Kentucky, and James Brown, of Louisiana, both of them United States senators, and the latter minister to France. William Preston was the father of a numerous family, male and female, and many of his descendants have been eminent in various walks of life. John Preston, the ancestor, appears to have been a quiet man, and without the bustling energy which characterized other pioneer settlers; but the traits which he and "his wife Elizabeth" transmitted to their posterity is a noble testimony that the pair possessed more than common merit.

On the day that John Preston "proved his importation," the court ordered that "Edward Boyle, for damning the court and swearing four oaths in their presence, be put in the stocks for two hours, and be fined twelve shillings" (\$2).

Till the year 1746, no vestrymen had been elected, as provided in the act of 1738. In that year, however, an election was held, and twelve persons were chosen to constitute the vestry of the parish. It is probable that all the twelve,

except John Madison, were Dissenters, and held the office merely to comply with the law of the land. The first name on the list is that of James Patton, who certainly was not an adherent of the established church. The vestry met for the first time, April 6, 1747, and the Rev. John Hindman appeared with letters from the governor, etc., recommending him for employment as "rector of the parish." The vestry, however, were not in a hurry, and proceeded to drive a bargain with Mr. Hindman. They agreed to accept him, provided he would not insist upon the purchase of glebe lands, etc., for two years, and would hold his services, in the meanwhile, in the court-house, "and in people's houses of the same persuasion." Moreover, he was not to complain to the governor in regard to the tardiness of his vestrymen. A glebe farm, however, was purchased, and a church building was erected in Staunton. The farm was at the foot of North Mountain, about five miles south of Swoope's depot, and is now owned by the Thompson family. No church was ever erected there, but an acre or more of the land has, from an early day to the present time, been used as a public burying ground. In common with other glebe lands, the farm was disposed of as directed by law, after the disestablishment of the Church of England in the state. The church at Staunton was built on land donated by Beverley, April 3, 1750, and was not completed till 1753-4. [For a fuller account of the proceedings of the vestry, see Peyton's History, pages 96-102.]

Mr. Hindman had left the parish by May 21, 1750. At a meeting of the vestry on that day, Mr. Closeseme was recommended as rector, but was rejected, the vestry "not being acquainted with him," and resolving to receive no minister "without a trial first had." For more than two years the parish was vacant, and then, in 1752, the Rev. John Jones was inducted on the recommendation of Governor Dinwiddie. Mr. Jones held the position till 1773, and was succeeded by the Rev. Alexander Belmaine.

But we have anticipated the course of events. It is probable that on the day, in 1746, vestrymen were elected, delegates, or "burgesses," to represent Augusta county in the colonial assembly, were also elected. We find no trace of such election, however, in our local archives or elsewhere. The county was duly represented in the "house of burgesses," nevertheless, and from several acts found in Henning's Statutes at Large, it appears that the county was required to pay the "wages" of her representatives. The name and fame of one of our earliest burgesses have been perpetuated by a stone erected in the glebe burying-ground. We give a literal copy of the inscription:

HERE LYS THE INTERD BODY OF COL:
JOHN WILLSON WHO DEPARTED THIS
LIFE IN THE -YARE- OF OUR LORD 1773
IN -THE 72- Y^r- OF HIS EAG HAVING
SERVD HIS COUNTY -27- YA -REPRESE-
-NTATIVE -IN -THE HONOURABLE -HOUS-
-OF -BURJESIS. IN VIRGINIA &c

Col. Willson is not to be held responsible for the illiteracy and mistakes of the stone-cutter. We presume there is no mistake as to the date of his death, and the statement that he served 27 years as a member of the house of burgesses. He must, therefore, have been elected in 1746, and have served, upon repeated elections, continuously till his death.

R. A. Brock, Esq., Secretary of the Virginia Historical Society, has furnished to us the following list of delegates from Augusta in the house of burgesses:

1751.....	John Willson and John Madison
1752.....	" " " " "
1757.....	" " " Gabriel Jones
1758.....	" " " " "
1759.....	" " " Israel Christian
1761.....	" " " " "
1768.....	" " " William Preston
1769.....	" " " " "
1771.....	" " " Gabriel Jones
1773.....	" " " Sam'l McDowell
1776.....	George Matthews " "

In the interval, from 1761 to 1768, and probably at other times, Thomas Lewis served as one of the delegates from Augusta. James Patton also represented the county, for we find that at November term of the county court, 1755, an allowance was made to his executor for "burgess wages."

We again revert to an earlier period in the history of the county. On May 21, 1747, George Wythe appeared before the county court and took the oaths required of attorneys. At the same time the grand jury presented five persons as swearers and two for sabbath breaking.

The number of tithables in the county in 1747 was 1,670, and the population probably about 8,350.

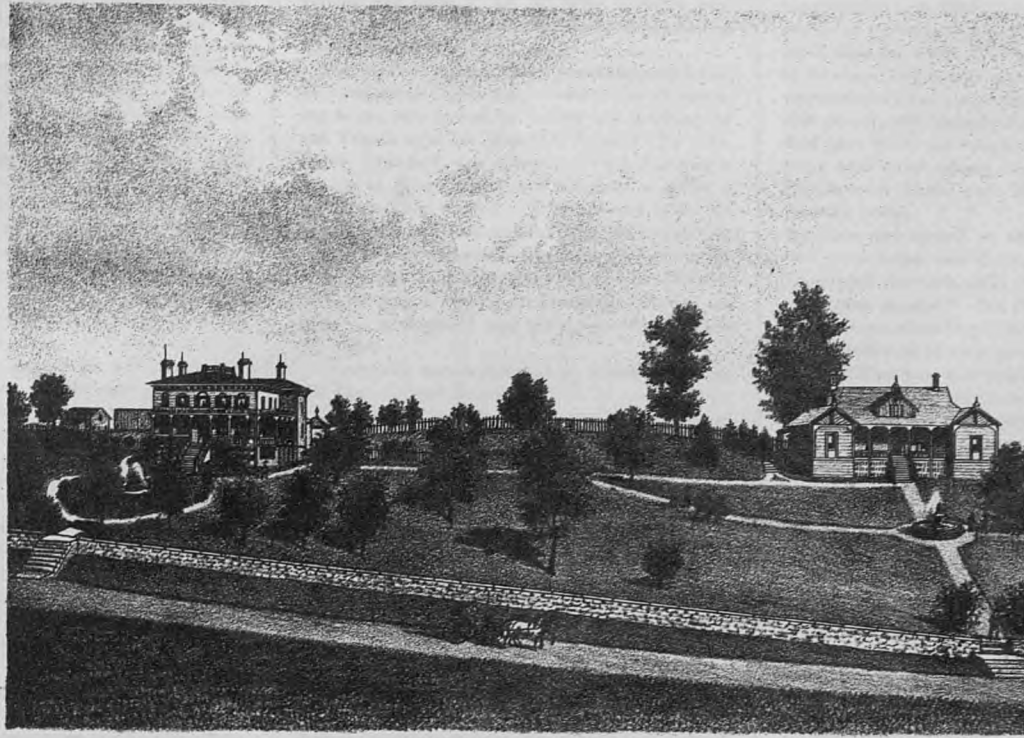
The following extract from the records of the court, of date May 20, 1748, is a part of the history of the times, and possesses some special interest: "On the motion of Matthew Lyle, yts ordered to be certified that they have built a Presbyterian meeting-house at a place known by the name of Timber Ridge, another at New Providence, and another at a place known by the name of Falling Spring." All these places are in the present county of Rockbridge, then part of Augusta. The record shows, among other things, the rapid settlement of the country.

And now, in the year 1748, we come to the first mention of the town of Staunton. During that year William Beverley laid off the beginning of the town, within his manor, and at his "Mill Place." The surveying was done by Thomas Lewis, the county surveyor, and the plat is highly creditable to the surveyor's skill. The number of town lots is forty-four, each, with a few exceptions, containing half an acre. The streets laid off and named are Beverley, Frederick and Johnson, running east and west, and Augusta, Water and Lewis, running north and south. A plat of twenty-five acres, east of Augusta street, and extending half a square north of Frederick street, was reserved for the use of the county. The inscription under the plat, signed by the surveyor, is as follows: "A plan of the town of Staunton, in Augusta county, each lot containing half an acre * * * laid out in the year 1748, and since confirmed by an act of the last session of assembly."

The plan was produced in court by William Beverley, February 27, 1749, and ordered to be recorded. It may be found in Deed Book No. 2, page 410.

The twenty-five acres referred to were conveyed by Beverley to the justices of the peace for the use of the court-house, etc., April 21, 1749. This tract was soon laid out in lots and streets, and the greater part disposed of by the court for paltry considerations, from time to time, till the land within the town belonging to the county was reduced to its present dimensions.

Why Staunton was so called has been a question for many years. We long ago saw a statement in print somewhere, that the new town was named in honor of Lady Gooch, wife of the governor, who, it was said, was a member of the English family of Staunton, but we do not vouch for the truth of the statement. There is a small town of the same name near Kendal, Westmoreland county, England.



STAUNTON MALE ACADEMY,
STAUNTON, VA.



AUGUSTA COUNTY COURT HOUSE,
STAUNTON, VA.

The inscription by the surveyor alludes to an act of assembly establishing the town. No such act is found in Hening, but it appears from a proclamation issued by Governor Dinwiddie, April 8, 1752, that "An act for establishing a town in Augusta county, and allowing fairs to be kept there," was passed by the assembly in 1748. It was, however, for some unexplained reason, "disallowed" by King George II, and pronounced by the governor "utterly void and of none effect." Thus the aspirations of Staunton were repressed, and the rising town had to wait for thirteen years for a new king liberal enough to grant her a charter.

But the probability is that George II never heard of Staunton, or of the veto pronounced in his name. Governor Dinwiddie arrived in Virginia early in 1752, and immediately gave offense by declaring the king's dissent to various acts which his predecessor had approved. The Assembly remonstrated against this exercise of the royal prerogative, but in vain.

The biographers of the celebrated Daniel Boone state that he came from Pennsylvania on an excursion to Augusta, about 1748-9, with his cousin, Henry Miller. The latter returned to the county, and built, on Mossy Creek, the first iron furnace in the valley.

We continue the extracts from the records of the court:

May 19, 1749.—"Ordered that James Montgomery and Richard Burton, or any one of them, wait on the court of Lunenburg, and acquaint them that the inhabitants of Augusta have cleared a road to the said county line, and desire that they will clear a road from the court-house of Lunenburg to meet the road already cleared by the inhabitants of Augusta."

Lunenburg and Augusta were, therefore, adjoining counties at that time. It will be observed that here, as well as elsewhere, nothing is said about grading the road—it was only "cleared." Till many years afterward nothing else was attempted; and it was not till the present century that our road surveyors could be persuaded that the distance was as short round a hill as over it.

November 28, 1749.—"A commission to Robert McClanahan, gent, to be sheriff of this county during his majesty's pleasure, was produced in court," etc. Adam Breckenridge qualified as deputy sheriff.

Robert McClanahan was a native of Ireland, and came to Augusta at an early day. A brother of his, Blair McClanahan, was a merchant in Philadelphia, a prominent politician, and member of congress after the revolution. His wife was Sarah Breckenridge, and his children were four sons and two daughters. Three of the sons, Alexander, Robert and John, were prominent in the Indian wars, and Alexander was a lieutenant-colonel during the revolution. One of his daughters married Alexander St. Clair, who came from Belfast, Ireland, and was long a prosperous merchant at Staunton, and an active member of the county court. Mr. St. Clair also represented Augusta in the state senate in the years 1791-3.

The grand juries of the county were, apparently, determined to enforce the observance of the sabbath day. In 1749, Andrew McNabb was presented for a breach of the sabbath—in what way is not stated; in 1750, Jacob Coger was presented "for a breach of the peace by driving hogs over the Blue Ridge on the sabbath"; and in 1751 James Frame was presented "for a breach of the sabbath in unnecessarily traveling ten miles."

At laying the county levy in 1750, allowance was made for 250 wolf heads—the entire head had to be produced. In 1751, allowance was made for 224 heads. In 1754, William Preston obtained an allowance for 103 heads. He hardly slew them all

himself, but most, if not all, were probably purchased by him. Indeed, wolf heads constituted a kind of currency.

The court and grand juries were extremely loyal. In 1749, Jacob Castle was arrested "for threatening to goe over to and be aiding and assisting of the French ag'st his Majesty's forces." In 1751, Owen Crawford was presented "for drinking a health to King James, and refusing to drink a health to King George." The accused made his escape, and the presentment was dismissed. In 1756, Francis Farguson was brought before the court for speaking disrespectfully of Gov. Dinwiddie, the representative of the king, but was excused on apologizing and giving security to keep the peace.

Constables were appointed at various times on the Roanoke and New rivers.

The next extract from the records of the court is of peculiar interest. Under date of August 29, 1751, we find the following:

"Ordered that the sheriff employ a workman to make a ducking stool for the use of the county according to law, and bring in his charge at laying the next county levy."

An act of assembly, passed in 1705, in accordance with the old English law, prescribed ducking as the punishment for women convicted as "common scolds." The ducking stool was no doubt made as ordered, but we have searched in vain for an instance of its use "according to law." The failure to use it was certainly not because there were no scolding women in the county at that time; for soon after the machine was constructed, or ordered, one Anne Brown went into court and "abused William Wilson, gentleman, one of the justices for this county, by calling him a rogue, and that on his coming off the bench she would give it to him with the devil." Mrs. Brown was taken into custody, but not ducked, as far as we can ascertain. Nor was the failure to use the stool due to timidity or tender heartedness on the part of members of the court. They lashed women as well as men at the public whipping-post, and were brave enough to take Lawyer Jones in hand on one occasion for "swearing an oath." After thorough investigation and mature reflection, we have come to the conclusion that the making of the ducking stool was an "Irish blunder" on the part of our revered ancestors. Having provided a jail, stocks, whipping-post, shackles, etc.—all the means and appliances necessary in a well-ordered community—they ordered a ducking stool without reflecting that there was no water deep enough for its use within reach of the court-house.

On May 30, 1751, John David Wilpert (the only man with three names we have encountered yet) petitioned the court, setting forth that he had been "at considerable expense in coming from the northward and settling in these parts," and had rented three lots in the new-erected town of Staunton, through which runs a good and convenient stream of water; and praying leave to build a grist and fulling mill. The petition was resisted by John Lewis, who had a mill within a mile of town, and the case was taken by appeal to the general court. How it was ultimately decided, we are not advised; but the petition no doubt indicates the origin of "Fackler's mill," which stood on the creek, south of Beverley street, and between Water and Lewis streets.

In the year 1752, the Assembly of Virginia passed several acts "for encouraging persons to settle on the waters of the Mississippi river, in the county of Augusta."

Let us now refer again to the Rev. John Craig, and his narrative. The territory occupied by his congregation was "about thirty miles in length, and nearly twenty in breadth." The people agreed to have two meeting-houses, expecting to have two

congregations, as afterwards came to pass. The people of the Augusta, or stone church, neighborhood, amongst whom Mr. Craig lived, "were fewer in numbers, and much lower as to their worldly circumstances, but a good-natured, prudent, governable people, and liberally bestowed a part of what God gave them for religious and pious uses; always unanimous among themselves." "I had no trouble with them," says Mr. Craig, "about their meeting house. * * * They readily fixed on the place, and agreed on the plan for building it, and contributed cheerfully, money and labor to accomplish the work, all in the voluntary way, what every man pleased." But the people of the other section were, according to Mr. Craig's way of thinking, a stiff-necked and perverse generation. He says: "That part now called Tinkling Spring was most in numbers, and richer than the other, and forward, and had the public management of the affairs of the whole settlement: their leaders closed about providing necessary things for pious and religious uses, and could not agree for several years upon a plan or manner, where or how to build their meeting-house, which gave me very great trouble to hold them together, their disputes ran so high. A difference happened between Col. John Lewis and Col. James Patton, both living in that congregation, which was hurtful to the settlement, but especially to me. I could neither bring them to friendship with each other, or obtain both their friendships at once, ever after. This continued for thirteen or fourteen years, till Col. Patton was murdered by the Indians. At that time he was friendly with me. After his death, Col. Lewis was friendly with me till he died."

CHAPTER III.

INDIAN WARS, ETC., FROM 1753 TO 1775.

INSTANCES of robbery and massacre by the Indians had frequently occurred before the year 1753, as is shown by the records of the county court and otherwise. The most disastrous raid made by the Indians within the county, as it then existed, took place in December, 1743. A party of Indians from Ohio came into the valley, and John McDowell, who lived on Timber Ridge (now Rockbridge) summoned his neighbors to watch and, if need be, resist the savages. The whites fell into an ambush, at the junction of the North river and the James, and at the first fire McDowell and eight of his companions were slain. The Indians, alarmed at their own success, fled precipitately, and were not pursued. The people of the neighborhood gathered on the field of slaughter, and, says Foote, "took the nine bloody corpses on horseback and laid them side by side near McDowell's dwelling, while they prepared their graves, in overwhelming distress."

John McDowell's grave may still be found in Timber Ridge burying-ground, marked by a rough stone. He has been mentioned heretofore, as one of the first settlers in Borden's grant. His son, Samuel, was colonel of militia at the battle of Guilford, and the ancestor of the Reids, of Rockbridge; and his son James, who died in early life, was the grandfather of the late Governor James McDowell. His only daughter, Martha, married Col. George Moffett, of Augusta, a gallant soldier of the revolution, whose descendants are numerous in this county and elsewhere.

But while Indian forays were not uncommon, there was no concerted action by the savages, till the year 1753. From that time, for more than ten years, war raged all along the frontier. We do not propose to give a history of the general war, and can only briefly sketch some of the principal

events which immediately concerned the people of Augusta county.

France held Canada and Louisiana, which latter was understood to embrace all the country west of the Mississippi river. The territory mentioned was conceded by England to France; but not content with this vast domain, the French claimed all the territory watered by streams tributary to the Mississippi. In pursuance of their claim, they built Fort Du Quesne, where Pittsburg now stands, at that time, as held by Virginians, within the county of Augusta. In 1753, Governor Dinwiddie sent Maj. Washington to remonstrate with the French officer commanding on the Ohio, and to warn him that war was inevitable unless he withdrew. The French persisting in their claim, Dinwiddie began to prepare for the conflict, and invited the cooperation of the other colonies. The Indians, at first not specially friendly to either side, were conciliated by the French, and proved their faithful and efficient allies during the war.

Col. James Patton was "Lieutenant," or commander-in-chief, of the Augusta militia, in 1754. In January of that year, Gov. Dinwiddie wrote to him that he had determined to send two hundred men to reinforce the troops then at Monongahela. He therefore ordered Patton to "draw out" the militia of the county, and from them obtain by volunteering or drafting, fifty men for the purpose. The troops were to be at Alexandria, by February 20, and were to be commanded by Maj. George Washington. [Dinwiddie Papers, p. 50.]

Andrew Lewis, probably commanded the Augusta company. At any rate he was with Washington, July 4, 1754, at the capitulation of Fort Necessity, and, although wounded and hobbling on a staff, by his coolness probably prevented a general massacre of the Virginia troops.

No event occurred specially affecting the people of Augusta, till the year 1755. Early in that year a British force, under Gen. Braddock, arrived in America, and as soon as possible took up the line of march to expel the French from the territory occupied by them on the Ohio.

It is said that Thomas Lewis was sent with a company of men, to build a stockade fort in Greenbrier, then part of Augusta, to check Indian raids from that quarter. At an early day John Lewis, the father of Thomas, acquired extensive landed possessions in the Greenbrier region.

Braddock was accompanied by a considerable force of Virginians, and among the captains was Peter Hogg, of Augusta. A writer in Howe (page 204), states that Samuel Lewis, the oldest son of Col. John Lewis, was captain of another company, in which were all his brothers. There also accompanied the expedition a negro slave, named Gilbert, who died in Staunton, in 1844, at the reputed age of 112 years.

Braddock's defeat occurred on July 9, 1755. It was a slaughter, rather than a battle. Col. Dunbar, the British officer who succeeded to the command on the death of Braddock, retreated, or rather fled, with the remnant of the army to Winchester; and fearing for his safety even there, retired with the regulars to winter quarters in Philadelphia. Washington and other Virginians who escaped the massacre, returned to their homes deeply mortified and indignant at the inefficiency of the leaders of the expedition.

"The defeat of Braddock," says Howison, "left the whole frontier exposed, and alarm pervaded every family of the Shenandoah Valley. * * * Large bodies of Indians from the Ohio crossed the Alleghenies, and spreading themselves into small parties, carried desolation and death into each defenceless homestead. They gave no quarter, and spared neither age nor sex. Women and children were chosen objects of their barbarity."

The alarm about Staunton is described by the

Rev. John Craig in his narrative. He says: "When Gen. Braddock was defeated and killed, our country was laid open to the enemy, our people were in dreadful confusion, and discouraged to the highest degree. Some of the richer sort that could take some money with them to live upon, were for flying to a safer part of the country. My advice was then called for, which I gave, opposing that scheme as a scandal to our nation, falling below our brave ancestors, making ourselves a reproach among Virginians, a dishonor to our friends at home, an evidence of cowardice, want of faith and a noble Christian dependence on God, as able to save and deliver from the heathen; it would be a lasting blot to our posterity." Mr. Craig urged the building of forts, one of which was to be the church. He says: "They required me to go before them in the work, which I did cheerfully, though it cost me one-third of my estate. The people readily followed, and my congregation in less than two months was well fortified." (See Foote's Sketches, page 32.)

The above extract indicates the date of the building of the "Old Stone Church," which is still standing, called "Augusta church." There is a tradition that men, women and children aided in its erection, bringing sand from Middle river, on horseback, and transporting stone and timbers in like manner.

A massacre occurred during the same year, 1755 (not 1756, as stated by Foote), within the county. Col. James Patton had gone to the upper country on an exploring expedition, and was resting at the house of John Draper, in "Draper's Meadow," now called Smithfield, in Montgomery county. On a summer day, the men of the place being in the harvest field, the Shawnee Indians made a sudden descent upon the house. They killed Col. Patton and Draper's mother, and carried off the younger Mrs. Draper, her daughter, Mrs. Mary Inglis, and the two sons of the latter, Thomas and George, into captivity. The harvest hands, being without arms, could only provide for their own safety by hiding in the woods.

Col. James Patton was one of the three commissioners who concluded a short-lived treaty with the Indians, June 13, 1752, at Logstown, on the Ohio. He received a grant of 120,000 acres of land in the present counties of Botetourt and Montgomery. The town of Pattonsburg, in Botetourt, was called for him, and the neighboring town of Buchanan for his son-in-law, Col. John Buchanan. Col. Patton's will was admitted to record by the county court, November 26, 1755. It was executed in 1750, and in it the writer expressed his hope of eternal happiness through the merit and intercession of his Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ. He directed that his body should be buried at Tinkling Spring; and, further, that all differences between his executors in regard to his estate should be arbitrated by "the minister and elders of Tinkling Spring congregation." His children were two daughters: Mary, wife of William Thompson, and Margaret, wife of John Buchanan.

From the necessity of the case Col. Patton's body was buried at Smithfield, near the dwelling. His grave was covered with loose stones, and is without monument or inscription. An idle story that a large sum of money was buried with him led some vandals years ago to dig up and desecrate the grave.

The Indians who made the assault upon Draper's Meadow took the four prisoners to their settlements, in the present State of Ohio. Being separated from her children, Mrs. Inglis determined to escape, and after almost incredible suffering, succeeded in reaching her home. She had been absent about five months, of which forty-two days were spent in her return. Mrs. Draper remained in captivity for six or seven years. George Inglis

died in the hands of the Indians, while still a child. Thomas was found and redeemed by his father, after he had reached the age of seventeen years. A daughter of William and Mary Inglis married Gen. Trigg, and one of his daughters was the wife of the late Judge Allen Taylor.

The records of the court always indicate the state of the times. At August court, 1755, Joseph Carpenter, having supplied several Indians with ammunition, whom he thought to be friendly, the court fearing they might be "allied to the French king," ordered the accused into custody till he should give security.

At October term, 1755, many claims were allowed for patrolling, for provisions for Capt. David Lewis's company of rangers, for going on express, and for guarding the arms and ammunition sent for the use of the county. At November court a number of persons qualified as officers of foot companies.

A new court-house was completed in 1755, and first occupied by the court August 21.

In February, 1756, John O'Neil was examined by the court on the charge of speaking treasonable words, and acquitted; but being convicted of "abusing the government and cursing the Bible," he was held for trial.

The colonial government adopted measures of defence, and Washington was commissioned as colonel and commander-in-chief. The officers next in rank to him, chosen by himself, were Lieut.-Col. Adam Stephens and Major Andrew Lewis.

The depredations of the Indians led to what is known as the "Sandy Creek expedition," early in 1756. The leader was Maj. Andrew Lewis, and among the captains were William Preston, Peter Hogg, John Smith, Archibald Alexander, and Robert Breckenridge. These companies, says Campell, appear to have been already guarding the frontier when called upon for this new service.

Peter Hogg was a native of Scotland, and came to Augusta county about 1745. He was the ancestor of the Hoge family of Augusta. In 1759 he was licensed to practice law. John Smith was the ancestor of the late Judge Daniel Smith, of Rockingham, Joseph Smith, of Folly Mills, and others. Archibald Alexander was the executor of Benjamin Borden, the patentee, and ancestor of the well known Rockbridge family of that name, and of the late Mrs. McClurg, of Staunton.

Two volunteer companies, under Capts. Montgomery and Dunlap, joined the expedition, and a party of friendly Cherokees, under Capt. Paris. Capt. David Stuart, of Augusta, acted as commissary.

The expedition rendezvoused at Fort Frederick, on New river, then in Augusta county, and the whole force amounted to three hundred and forty men. While waiting at the fort for horses and pack-saddles, Messrs. Craig and Brown, the pioneer clergymen of the valley, preached to the soldiers.

Maj. Lewis started from Fort Frederick on February 18, and reached the head of Sandy Creek on the 28th. Before the middle of March, the supply of provisions began to run low; and soon afterwards, some of the party were rescued from starvation by the killing of several elk and buffaloes. On March 11, ten men deserted, and finally the whole body, except the officers and twenty or thirty of the privates, declared their purpose to return. It is said that they were ordered back, when within ten miles of the Ohio, by a messenger from Gov. Dinwiddie. It required two weeks for them to reach the nearest settlement, and during that interval, they endured great suffering from cold and hunger. Some of the men who separated from the main body, perished.

On a court day in 1756, Capt. John Dickenson, of Windy Cove, brought to Staunton a strange man, of dark complexion, but not a negro, nor an

Indian, who excited much curiosity at the time and for long afterwards. He had been found in the woods in a suffering condition, by Samuel Givens. As the stranger could not speak English, nor any language known to the people, it was impossible to learn who he was, and whence he came. The Rev. John Craig took him to his home, however, and after a time learned that the man was a native of Algiers, in Africa, and that his name was Selim. He had been captured at sea by Spaniards and taken to New Orleans, from which place he escaped and made his way to the backwoods of Augusta county. The earlier part of his history was written and published many years ago by the Rev. David Rice, of Kentucky; and the subsequent part is given in detail by Bishop Meade, in his historical collections. (See Peyton's History, pages 114-116.)

In the year 1757, there was a fort near the point where the public road from Staunton to the Warm Springs crosses the Cow Pasture river. At this fort, during the year mentioned, was a boy who was born in Augusta county in 1742. The boy was named Arthur Campbell, and he had volunteered as a militiaman to aid in protecting the frontier. Going one day with others to a thicket in search of plums, the party was fired upon by Indians lying in ambush, and young Campbell was slightly wounded and captured. He was taken to the vicinity of the great lakes, and detained a prisoner for three years, when he made his escape and returned home. About six years before the revolution, he removed to the Holston river, now Washington county, his father and family soon following. He was afterwards prominent in the assembly and the state convention of 1788, as well as during the revolutionary war. One of his sons, Col. John B. Campbell, fell at Chippewa, where he commanded the right wing of the army under Gen. Scott. Gen. William Campbell, the hero of King's mountain, also a native of Augusta county, was Arthur Campbell's cousin and brother-in-law.

Another expedition for the capture of Fort Du Quesne was set on foot in 1758, Fauquier being then Governor of Virginia. The English force consisted of six or seven thousand men under Gen. Forbes, Washington commanding the Virginian troops, some sixteen hundred in number. Major Grant, with a chosen company of eight hundred men, was despatched in advance to reconnoitre, Maj. Andrew Lewis having charge of the rear guard of the detachment. On arriving at the fort, a swarm of savages poured out and a butchery followed. Maj. Grant and Maj. Lewis were captured, and their lives spared through the intervention of French officers. But the Indians, who had taken alarm at the advance of Forbes' large force, withdrew from the fort, leaving there only five hundred French. The latter set fire to the buildings and proceeded down the Ohio, and the English took possession, November 25. The works were repaired, and the place was called Fort Pitt.

From 1757 to 1763, the people of Augusta, at least those residing within the present county limits, seem to have been relieved comparatively from the alarms of savage warfare. In 1758, Fort Seybert, in the present county of Pendleton, then Augusta, about fifty miles from Staunton, was captured by the Indians. There were thirty-six persons in the fort, twenty-five of whom were tomahawked. Eleven of the whites were taken off by the Indians, none of whom, except a boy named Dyer, returned, or were ever heard of.

We learn from Howe (page 204), that in 1761, about sixty Shawnees penetrated to the settlement on Jackson's river, committed several murders and carried off several prisoners, among whom were Mrs. Renix and her five children. The Indians were overtaken in their retreat by a party of whites, and nine of their number killed, but the

prisoners were not rescued. One of them, however, Mrs. Dennis, effected her escape in 1763.

The town of Staunton was at last chartered by act of assembly in November, 1761. The first trustees of the town were, William Preston, Israel Christian, David Stuart, John Brown, John Page, William Lewis, William Christian, *Elelge* McClanahan, Robert Breckenridge and Randal Lockheart. The act provided that two fairs might be held annually, in June and November; but positively prohibited the building of wooden chimneys in the town.

An aged man named James Hill, testifying in 1807, in the cause of Peter Heiskell vs. the Corporation of Staunton, gave some account of the town in 1762, when he settled here. Samson and George Matthews kept store at the northeast corner of Beverley and Augusta streets. Samson Matthews also kept an ordinary in the long frame building, a story and a half high, with dormer windows, which formerly stood on the east side of Augusta street, below Frederick. The lot at the southwest corner of Augusta and Frederick, was, in 1762, "Matthews' stable lot." Mrs. Woods lived on the west side of Augusta street, about midway between Beverley and Frederick. Mrs. Cowden lived on the west side of Augusta street, a little north of Beverley, and Daniel Kidd lived where the Lutheran church now stands. The deposition of Hill and the diagram which accompanied it, show that most of the twenty-five acres donated by Beverley in 1749, to the county, was occupied by town lots and streets in 1762.

Samson Matthews was the father-in-law of the late venerable Samuel Clark, of Staunton, and of Mr. Alexander Nelson, whose descendants are quite numerous. George Matthews, born in Augusta in 1739, was father-in-law of Gen. Samuel Blackburn. He was famous in Indian wars and during the revolution, and finally became Governor of Georgia; elected in 1780, and again in 1794 and in 1812.

Col. John Lewis, the pioneer settler, died February 1, 1762, having attained the age of eighty-four years. His will, executed November 28, 1761, and admitted to record November 18, 1762, expressed the writer's pious hopes. He was buried on the farm where he lived. The executors were the testator's three sons, Thomas, Andrew and William. Charles is named in the will, but no mention is made of Samuel.

Canada was conquered by the English in 1759, and in 1763 peace was formally concluded between England and France. The savage allies of the French, however, having acquired a taste for blood, continued the war on the English settlements. In the year 1763, Cornstalk, the celebrated Shawnee warrior, appears in history for the first time. Nothing is known of his youth. At the head of about sixty Indians he fell upon the settlers in Greenbrier, killing the men and capturing the women and children. The white settlers who could escape, fled before the savages to Jackson river, pursued by their foe. A part of the Indians remained behind in charge of the prisoners, while a part crossed the mountain to Kerr's Creek, now Rockbridge county. There, on July 17, a scene of horror was presented. Men, women and children were indiscriminately slaughtered. When sated with blood and plunder the Indians retired; but they, or another portion of the body to which they belonged, were overtaken by a party of white men hastily collected, and routed at, or near, the head of Back creek, now Bath county. John Dickenson, of Windy Cove, and John Young, who lived near the church since known as Hebron, were members of the pursuing party, and conspicuous for their bravery. Thomas Young, brother of John, was slain in the action. His body was buried on the field, but his scalp,

torn from his head by the Indian who killed him, was brought home and buried in the Globe graveyard.

This lamentable occurrence spread alarm throughout the county. Some persons residing in Staunton fled across the Blue Ridge. Measures of defence were, however, immediately adopted. At the August court, Andrew Lewis qualified as lieutenant of the county, or commander-in-chief of the county militia; William Preston, qualified as colonel, and the following persons as captains: Walter Cunningham, Alexander McClanahan, William Crow and John Bowyer. John McClanahan, Michael Bowyer and David Long, qualified as lieutenants, and James Ward as ensign.

The Indians made a second raid upon Kerr's Creek, the date of which is uncertain. It may have been in October, 1763, or in March, 1764. Whatever the date, the horrors of the massacre exceeded those of the first. In the two incursions the Indians slaughtered from sixty to eighty white people. In the first they took no prisoners; but in the second, from twenty-five to thirty persons were carried into captivity, some of whom never returned. Among the captives were Cunninghams, Hamiltons and Gilmores. An entire family of Doughertys, five Hamiltons and three Gilmores were slain.

For the only detailed account of the Kerr's creek massacre, we are indebted to the Rev. Samuel Brown, of Bath county.

In the meanwhile a general war between the whites and Indians was raging. Col. Bouquet defeated the latter, August 2, 1764, at Bushy Run, in western Pennsylvania. Soon afterward, however, the British government made various efforts to establish friendly relations with the Indians. Col. Bouquet, commanding at Fort Pitt (now Pittsburg), issued a proclamation forbidding any British subject from settling or hunting west of the Alleghany mountains without written permission; and in the fall of 1764, proceeded with a body of troops to the Muskingum, in Ohio, then in Augusta county. On November 9, he concluded a treaty of peace with the Delawares and Shawnees, and received from them two hundred and six white prisoners. Of these, ninety were Virginians, thirty-two men and fifty-eight women and children. Some of the captives who had been carried off while young, had learned to love their savage associates and, refusing to come voluntarily, were brought away by force.

Mrs. Renix, who was captured on Jackson's river, in 1761, was not restored to her home till the year 1767. In pursuance of the terms of Bouquet's treaty, she was brought to Staunton in the year last mentioned. Her daughter died on the Miami; two of her sons, William and Robert, returned with her; her son Joshua remained with the Indians and became a chief of the Miamis.

A corps of Virginia volunteers accompanied Bouquet's expedition and were assigned the places of honor on the march, a portion of them forming the advance guard and the remainder bringing up the rear. A part, if not all, of this corps were Augusta men. Charles Lewis and Alexander McClanahan were captains of companies, and John McClanahan was one of the lieutenants. As late as 1779, John McClanahan being then dead, his infant son was allowed two thousand acres of bounty land for his father's services in the expedition.

The county court of Augusta did not meet in October, 1764. At April court, 1765, a vast number of military claims were ordered to be certified—for provisions furnished to the militia, for horses pressed into service, etc. William Christian, William McKamy and others presented claims "for ranging," and Andrew Cowan "for enlisting men to garrison Fort Nelson." The orders are

curt and unsatisfactory, giving no clue as to when and where the services were performed.

From 1764 to 1774, no incident of importance or interest occurred in the county, as far as we have been able to ascertain. The inhabitants appear to have pursued the even tenor of their way, in comparative security, for nearly ten years. On court days, Staunton was doubtless crowded with people. Litigation was brisk; the number of causes tried in the county court exceeded anything known in modern times. Hunting or trapping wolves was one of the most important industries. Every year the court granted certificates for hundreds of wolf heads and for more or less winter-rotted hemp, for which also the law offered a bounty. The county was divided in 1769, and the southern portion erected into the county of Botetourt.

But the happy days of peace did not last. In the early part of 1774, the Indians assumed a position of hostility toward the whites. The whole race was alarmed at the attempts of white men to occupy Kentucky. They were, moreover, not without provocation, on account of the ruthless conduct of encroaching settlers and hunters. Single murders, on both sides, were committed on the Ohio frontier; and finally, in the month of April, the family of Logan, a noted Indian chief, was slaughtered in cold blood not far below Wheeling by a party of whites. A general war immediately began, and Logan led one of the first of the marauding parties against the settlers on the Monongahela. Col. Angus McDonald, at the head of a small force, advanced from Wheeling into the Indian country, but returned without accomplishing any important result. The Indians continued hostile and proceeded to form extensive alliances amongst themselves.

The government at Williamsburg then took steps to protect the western frontier. Lord Dunmore, the governor, ordered Gen. Andrew Lewis, at that time of Botetourt, to raise a force of eleven or twelve hundred men, and march to the Ohio; while he at the head of a similar force raised in the lower valley, should move to Fort Pitt, and thence to meet Lewis at Point Pleasant.

Eight companies raised in Augusta county formed a regiment of four hundred men, commanded by Col. Charles Lewis. His captains were George Matthews, Alexander McClanahan, John Dickenson, John Lewis, Benjamin Harrison, William Paul, Joseph Haynes and Samuel Wilson. Col. William Fleming, of Botetourt, commanded a regiment of about the same number of men, and one of his captains was Robert McClanahan, a native of Augusta and brother of Alexander.

The Augusta companies rendezvoused in Staunton the latter part of August. Samson Matthews' ordinary seems to have been headquarters. Here, no doubt, grog was freely dispensed for several days, but tradition states only one fact in connection with the gathering. It is said that the heights of the men of one company were marked on the bar-room walls, nearly all the men being over six feet two inches in their stockings, and not one under six feet.

Of the departure from Staunton and march to Camp Union (Lewisburg) we have no account. At the latter place Gen. Lewis assembled his command about the 4th of September.

On September 11, the command began the march to the Ohio. There was no track of any kind, and few white men had ever gone down the Kanawha valley. Of course wagons could not be employed, and provisions were transported on pack-horses. Many cattle also were driven along to supply food for the army. In nineteen days the command advanced from Camp Union to Point Pleasant, a distance of one hundred and sixty miles, averaging eight and a half miles a day.

Early Monday morning, October 10, the Virginians were suddenly attacked by a large body of Indians, led by Cornstalk and Logan. The battle raged all day, and was one of the most noted conflicts that ever occurred between Indians and white men. Seventy-five of the whites, including Cols. Lewis and Field and Capt. Robert McClanahan, were killed, and one hundred and forty were wounded. The loss of the Indians is unknown, but they were signally defeated.

After burying the dead and providing for the wounded, Gen. Lewis marched into Ohio to meet Gov. Dunmore. A council with the Indians was held, and a temporary treaty of peace was concluded. Logan was not at the meeting, but delivered to the messenger who went to request his attendance the speech which more than all else has perpetuated his fame.

The anxiety of the people at home in the meantime may be imagined. There is no record or tradition in regard to it, but the county court records indicate the state of feeling. The October term of the court began on the 18th, but no business was transacted, except the qualification of several new justices of the peace. The court met again on the 19th, but only to adjourn to the next term. The whole community was too anxiously awaiting intelligence from the west to attend to ordinary affairs. The news of the battle could not well have reached Staunton until about the 24th of October.

When November court came round the surviving heroes of Point Pleasant had returned to their homes. One of them, Andrew Moore, appeared in court on November 15, and qualified to practice law. He was the father of Messrs. David E. and S. McD. Moore, of Lexington, and became a United States Senator from Virginia. Alexander McClanahan sat as a magistrate on the county court bench August 22, and then hurried with his company to Camp Union; he was on the bench again on November 16, soon after his return.

By January court, 1775, the men who were in the expedition had gotten up their accounts against the government for pecuniary compensation. Many were for "diets of militia;" some for "sundries for the militia;" others for "driving pack-horses." William Sharp and others presented claims for services as spies. John Hays demanded pay for himself and others as "pack-horse masters." William Hamilton had a bill for riding express, and William McCune another as "cow-herd."

Col. Charles Lewis executed his will August 10, 1774, on the eve of his departure for Point Pleasant, and the instrument was admitted to record January 17, 1775. The testator seems to have been a man of considerable wealth. Four children survived him—John, Andrew, Elizabeth and Margaret, and one was born after his death.

Cornstalk survived his defeat about three years. He was killed at Point Pleasant in 1777 by some of the men stationed there, in revenge, it was believed, for the Kerr's Creek massacres.

CHAPTER IV.

THE WAR OF THE REVOLUTION, ETC., FROM 1774 TO 1783.

WHILE the strife between the colonies and mother country was brewing, in 1774, the port of Boston was closed by the British, and the people of that city, mainly dependent upon commerce for subsistence, were reduced to a state of destitution and suffering. The sympathy of the country was aroused, and contributions for their relief were made in various places. The remote

county of Augusta sent her quota the very autumn her sons fought the Indians at Point Pleasant. Says the historian Bancroft: "When the sheaves had been harvested, and the corn threshed and ground in a country as yet poorly provided with barns or mills, the backwoodsmen of Augusta county, without any pass through the mountains that could be called a road, noiselessly and modestly delivered at Frederick, one hundred and thirty-seven barrels of flour as their remittance to the poor of Boston." (Vol. 7, p. 74.) What a task the transportation was, may be inferred from the fact that nearly fifty years afterwards, Bockett's stages took three days to make the trip from Staunton to Winchester.

Again, in 1777, the people of Augusta sent supplies to the destitute. From some cause unknown to us, there was a scarcity of provisions in Washington county, southwest Virginia; and the records of that county show that Augusta contributed flour for the use of "the distressed inhabitants." (See Howe, p. 501.)

But our annals are concerned with the contentions of men, rather than the charities of life. We come now to a curious episode in the history of the county. Lord Dunmore, the last royal Governor of Virginia, and his Lieutenant, Connelly, figure therein somewhat as comic actors, it seems to us, although at the time the business was considered serious enough.

Virginia claimed by virtue of her charter, all the territory between certain parallels of latitude, which included a part of western Pennsylvania, about Pittsburg. Fort Pitt was abandoned as a military post in 1773, but the country was rapidly occupied by English settlers.

In January, 1774, Dr. John Connelly, a citizen of Virginia, but previously of Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, appeared at Pittsburg and posted a notice of his appointment by Governor Dunmore as "Captain Commandant of the militia of Pittsburg and its dependences," etc. etc.

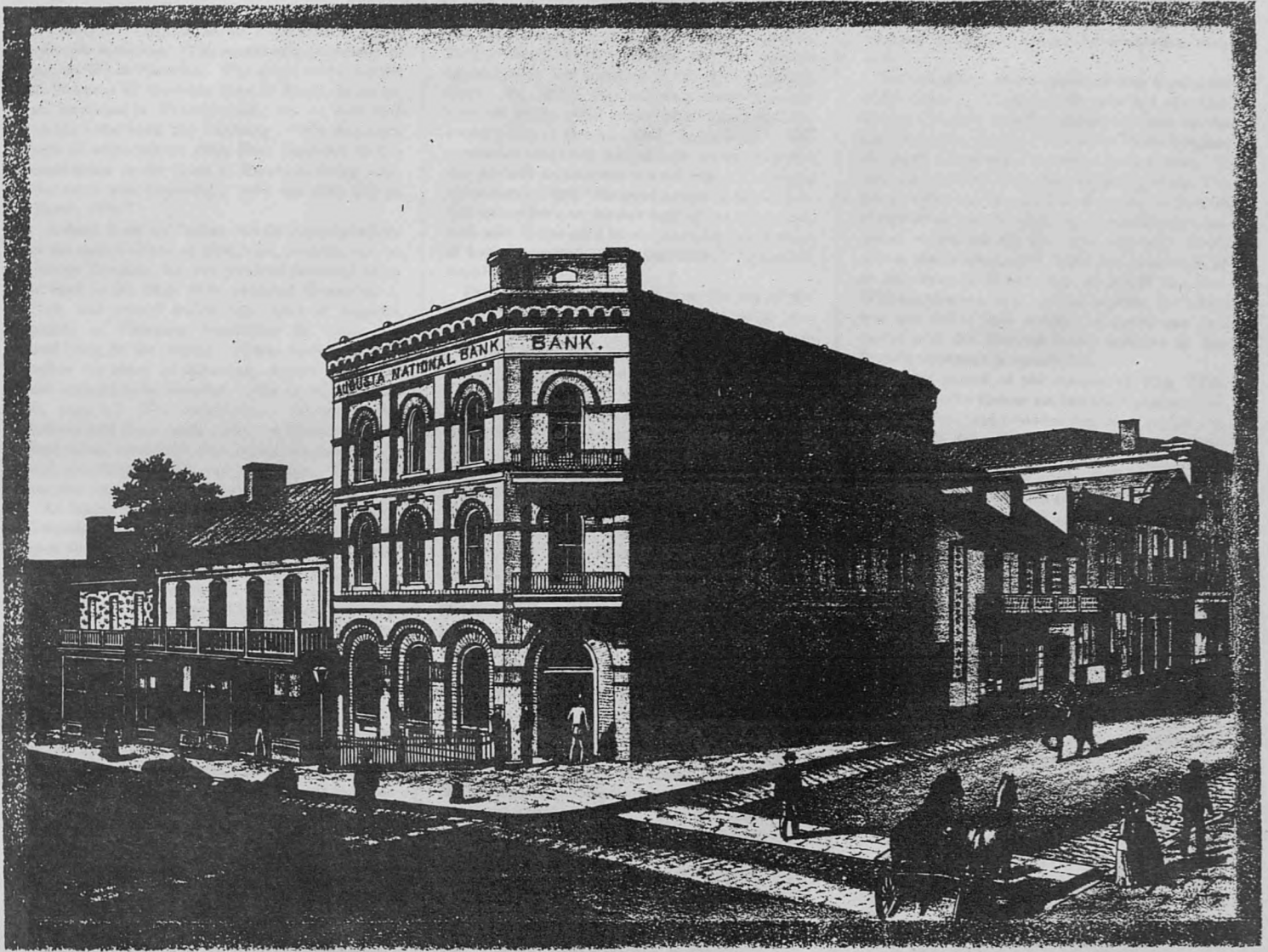
Governor Penn, of Pennsylvania, wrote to Dunmore demanding an explanation. At the same time he wrote to the Pennsylvania authorities at Pittsburg, urging them to maintain the rights of that province, and ordering the arrest of Connelly. The "Captain Commandant" was accordingly arrested and committed to jail; but he prevailed with the sheriff to give him leave of absence for a few days, and instead of returning to prison, came to Virginia.

On March 15, 1774, Connelly presented himself before the court at Staunton, and qualified as a justice of the peace for Augusta county, and commandant at Pittsburg.

Dunmore replied to Penn on March 3, insisting upon the rights of Virginia, and demanding reparation for the insult to Connelly. The least that would be accepted was the dismissal of Arthur St. Clair, the clerk who "had the audacity to commit a magistrate acting in discharge of his duty." Governor Penn replied, and so the controversy continued.

Connelly returned to Pittsburg and gathered around him a body of armed men, a portion of the people claiming to be Virginians. He opened correspondence with the Pennsylvania magistrates, which proving unsatisfactory, he arrested three of them—Smith, Mackey and McFarland—and sent them to Staunton for trial. Upon arriving here, they gave security and were discharged to find their way home.

The President of the Pennsylvania court informed Governor Penn of the arrest of his associates. He stated that Connelly, having at Staunton qualified as a justice of the peace for Augusta county, "in which it is pretended that the country about Pittsburg is included," was constantly surrounded by an armed body of about



AUGUSTA NATIONAL BANK,
STAUNTON, VA.

one hundred and eighty militia, and obstructed every process emanating from the court.

Connelly re-occupied Fort Pitt, changing the name to Fort Dunmore.

The following order appears among the proceedings of the County Court of Augusta, under date of January 19, 1775. "His majesty's writ of adjournment being produced and read, it is ordered that this court be adjourned to the first Tuesday in next month, and then to be held at Fort Dunmore, in this county, agreeable to the said writ of adjournment."

The court was held at Fort Dunmore, under Capt. Connelly's auspices, and several persons were arraigned before it for obstructing the authority of Virginia, as we learn from a Pennsylvania historian. The record of proceedings is not on file at Staunton. The court could not sit in Staunton at the usual time in March, being on an excursion to Pennsylvania; but we next find on the order book the following: "His majesty's writ of adjournment from Fort Dunmore to the court-house in the town of Staunton, being read, the court was accordingly held the 25th day of March, 1775."

A deed from six Indian chiefs, representatives of the united tribes of Mohawks, Oneidas, etc., to George Croghan, for two hundred thousand acres of land on the Ohio river, executed November 4, 1768, was proved before the court of Augusta county at Pittsburg, September 25, 1775,—the land lying in the county. It was further proved before the court at Staunton, August 19, 1777, and ordered to be recorded. [See Deed Book No. 22, page 1.] The consideration for which the Indians sold these lands embraced blankets, stockings, calico, vermilion, ribbons, knives, gunpowder, lead, gun-flints, needles, and *jews-harps*. The deed was also recorded in Philadelphia.

At length the Pennsylvanians kidnapped Capt. Connelly and took him to Philadelphia, and thereupon the Virginians seized three of the rival justices and sent them to Wheeling as hostages.

By this time, the war of the Revolution was approaching. The people of the disputed territory were alike patriotic, but the distinction between Virginians and Pennsylvanians was still maintained. Each party held meetings, separate from the other, and denounced the encroachments of the British government.

Capt. Connelly, being discharged from custody, turned up a tory, and, in November, 1775, was arrested in Fredericktown, Maryland, for being engaged in treasonable projects. He was detained in jail, at Philadelphia, till April 2, 1777. What became of him is not known.

Finally, in 1779, each of the states appointed commissioners, and through their agency the dispute was quieted in 1780. The boundary was not definitely fixed, however, till 1785, when Mason and Dixon's line was established.

A detailed account of the boundary controversy is given in Creigh's History of Washington county, Pennsylvania, and we are indebted to that work for most of the facts here stated.

By act of assembly, in October, 1776, the district of West Augusta—west of the Alleghany mountains—was reorganized, and the boundary fixed, and soon afterward three counties therein were established. We may state that the rhetorical declaration about West Augusta, attributed to Washington, is sheer fiction. What Washington said, in the simplest terms, was, that if driven to extremity, he would retreat to Augusta county, in Virginia, and there make a stand.

The first patriotic meeting of the people of Augusta, of which we have any account, was held in Staunton, February 22, 1775. A committee was appointed to choose delegates to the general convention at Richmond, March 20, and to draw up

instructions. The committee consisted of the Rev. Alexander Belmaine, Samson Matthews, Alexander McClanahan, Michael Bowyer, William Lewis and George Matthews, and the delegates appointed were Thomas Lewis and Samuel McDowell. It is supposed that Mr. Belmaine wrote the resolutions, or instructions, which are expressed in the terms of most popular declarations of the time.

A "committee for the county of Augusta" was appointed in 1775—a sort of "vigilance committee"—of which Silas Hart, an old justice of the peace, was the chairman. On October 3 the committee met at Staunton, and, pursuant to summons, Alexander Miller appeared before them to answer charges. We do not know who Miller was, nor what became of him, but he was accused of having denounced as rebellion, etc., the popular opposition to the measures of the British government. Mr. Miller was solemnly tried and pronounced guilty. His punishment anticipated the recent policy in Ireland called "boycotting." The committee subjected the offender to no restraint, and advised no violence toward him. They only recommended that "the good people of this county and colony have no further dealings or intercourse with said Miller until he convinces his countrymen of having repented for his past folly." [American Archives, vol. 3, p. 939.]

The annals of the county during the war of the Revolution are quite meager. This valley was remote from the scenes of combat, and only once was there an alarm of invasion. The domestic life of the people and the business of the court were generally undisturbed during the war. Public business was transacted and writs were issued in the name of the commonwealth of Virginia, instead of the king of Great Britain, and there was little other change. The abolition of the religious establishment in the course of time marked the most important departure from the old order of things. So far from danger was this region considered, that some members of the Society of Friends, arrested in Philadelphia for disloyalty, were sent here for safe keeping. Several hundred Hessians, captured at Trenton, were also detained here for a considerable time, and there is a tradition that some of these were employed by Peter Hanger to build the older part of the dwelling still standing on Spring Farm, adjacent to the city water works.

Early in the war, Andrew Lewis was appointed by the Continental congress, brigadier general; William Lewis, George Matthews and Alexander McClanahan were appointed colonels, and John Lewis was appointed major. It is said that Washington recommended Andrew Lewis for the post of commander-in-chief of the Continental armies. He commanded at Williamsburg early in 1776, and in July drove Dunmore from Gwynn's Island. It seems there was no opportunity for the display of the military talent universally attributed to him. He died during the war, in 1781.

Col. McClanahan was at the battle of Great Bridge, near Norfolk, December 9, 1775, in which every British grenadier was killed, without loss to the Virginians. He served under Lewis, at Williamsburg, in 1776.

Col. Matthews served on a wider and more conspicuous field than his compatriots just named. He commanded the 9th Virginia regiment, and gained great fame at Germantown and in other battles.

Till the year 1781, we do not learn that any companies organized in this county marched to the war. Apparently, the young men went off one by one or in parties without organization here. Nearly all the younger men of the county were in the service, more or less. William McCutchen served three terms of enlistment, and while returning from the first, in New Jersey, found it difficult

to pay his way home with his depreciated Continental money.

The following is a synopsis of the several legislative acts for raising troops, as far as related to Augusta county:

The convention of 1775 passed an ordinance for raising two regiments of regulars, the companies from Augusta and some other counties to be "expert riflemen."

The ordinance of May, 1776, provided for a company from Augusta of fifty men, to be stationed at the mouth of Little Kanawha river. It was some of these men who killed Cornstalk and his son Elinipsico at Point Pleasant.

The act of October, 1776, gave to Augusta two captains, etc., with companies of seventy-four men each.

The act passed at the session of the legislature which began in October, 1777, provided that Col. George Gibson's battalion should continue in the Continental service, in place of the Ninth Virginia regiment, which was captured at Germantown. It also provided for the speedy recruiting of the Virginia regiments in service, Augusta to furnish ninety-seven men by drafting, if a sufficient number of volunteers did not come forward. Foote relates that a company of volunteers was made up at this time in Rockbridge, of which the Rev. William Graham was elected captain, but which was not called into service. A gentleman connected with the Graham family informs us that Foote's statement is apocryphal.

The act passed at the session of May, 1779, recited that the former act had not "produced the end proposed," and provided that the "one twenty-fifth man of the militia" be drafted for eighteen months.

The act passed at the session which began May 1, 1780, provided that the several counties (except the county of Illinois and the territory in dispute between Virginia and Pennsylvania) furnish one-fifteenth man of the militia, to serve in the Continental army till December 31, 1781. Staunton was appointed a rendezvous.

The last act on the subject, passed at the session which began October 16, 1780, called for 3,000 men, and fixed the quota of Augusta as 80, Rockbridge 38, and Rockingham 49, to be drafted for eighteen months if not furnished by volunteering.

At the same session an act was passed for supplying the army with clothes, provisions and wagons. Augusta was required to furnish 46 suits of clothes, Rockbridge 17, and Rockingham 19.

From the proceedings of the legislature in 1781, we learn that there had been some trouble in Augusta in reference to a draft; but the date, cause and extent of it are not stated. Probably the men called for were furnished without drafting.

The court provided for the families of soldiers out of the county levy. At November court, 1779, Mary Waugh and Mary Lendon, soldiers' wives, were allowed, the one forty and the other sixty pounds (\$133.33 $\frac{1}{3}$ and \$200) for the ensuing year. The people were evidently almost unanimous in support of the American cause. We have heard of only two disloyal men in the county during the war. At a term of the court in 1781, William Ward and Lewis Baker were found guilty of treason in levying war against the commonwealth, and sent on for trial. The court on that occasion was composed of Elijah McClanahan, Alexander St. Clair, Alexander McClanahan, Thomas Adams and James Trimble.

The counties of Rockingham and Rockbridge were established by act of assembly, passed at the session which began in October, 1777, the former being taken from Augusta, and the latter from Augusta and Botetourt.

After the battle of the Cowpens, when Morgan was retreating to Virginia with his prisoners, and Cornwallis was trying to intercept him, a call was made upon our valley for troops. Capt. James Tate, who had fought with Morgan at the Cowpens, commanded a company raised in Bethel and Tinkling Spring neighborhoods; Capt. George Moffett, who also was at the Cowpens, commanded another company. Col. Samuel McDowell commanded the battalion.

When the Augusta companies were about to start from Midway, the latter part of February, the Rev. James Waddell, of Tinkling Spring, delivered a parting address to the men. Many of them never returned. Capt. Tate and a large number of private soldiers were killed at Guilford, on March 15. Some who came back, carried on their persons ever afterwards the marks of British sabres. Archibald Stuart, afterwards the judge, was a commissary, but fought in the ranks at Guilford. His father, Maj. Alexander Stuart, who commanded the Augusta and Rockbridge battalion (Col. McDowell being disabled by sickness), was wounded and captured. He was detained for some time on board a British ship. In the retreat, Samuel Steele, who died in his old age near Waynesborough, shot a British dragoon who followed him, but two others assailed him, and he was forced to succumb. He refused, however, to give up his gun, which he afterwards succeeded in reloading, and then put his captors to flight. David Steele, of Midway, was cut down in the retreat, and left for dead. He revived and came home, and lived to old age. Foote states that the scar of a deep wound over one of David Steele's eyes painfully disfigured him. Several persons who often saw the old soldier, have informed us that his face was not disfigured at all. His skull was cleft by a sabre, and to the end of his days he wore a silver plate over the spot. Col. Fulton, who was at Guilford, and afterwards for many years represented Augusta in the legislature, is said to have been disfigured as Steele is described to have been. One of the Wilsons of Bethel, was probably the last survivor of Guilford in this region. The Rockbridge troops started from Lexington, February 26, and the survivors reached home again on March 23, following.

Among the revolutionary soldiers from Augusta, who died within the last fifty years, are the following: John Tate, died August 6, 1836; Samuel Steele, June 8, 1837; Maj. Samuel Bell, May 15, 1838; Lewis Shuey, January 22, 1839; Robert Harnsberger, February 7, 1840; Smith Thompson, May 12, 1840; Peter Lohr, September 21, 1841; Samuel Gardner, January 11, 1842; Francis Gardner, July 26, 1842; John Bell, Sr., October 17, 1842; Claudius Buster, November 20, 1843; Capt. Robert Thompson, January 23, 1847; William McCutchen, June 29, 1848.

In June, 1781, the first and only alarm of the war occurred in Augusta county. The members of the legislature were driven from Charlottesville on the 4th, by the approach of Tarleton, a dashing commander of dragoons, and met in Staunton on the 7th, in the old parish church. But on the following Sunday, the 10th, as stated, a session was held to enter an adjournment to the Warm Springs. This proceeding was caused by a report that Tarleton was pursuing across the Blue Ridge. Some of the members of assembly took the road toward Lexington, and others went to the north-west part of the county. Patrick Henry was one of the latter, and such seemed to be the emergency that, according to tradition, he left Staunton wearing only one boot.

The cause of the alarm and stampede has been variously reported. The late Judge Francis T. Brooke, then a young lieutenant of the Continental army, gives one version of the matter in a

memoir he left behind him. He was in Albe-marle, in command of a detachment, and was ordered by his captain, Bohannon, if he could not join the Baron Steuben, to proceed to Staunton, and thence to join the corps to which he belonged in the army of La Fayette. He says: "The next day I crossed the ridge about six miles to the south of Rockfish Gap. When I got to where Waynesboro' is, I found a large force of eight hundred men, or one thousand riflemen, under the command of Gen. McDowell. He stopped me, saying he had orders to stop all troops to defend the gap. I replied that I belonged to the Continental army and had orders to go to Staunton, and said to the men, 'Move on,' and he let me pass. At that time I suppose a regimental coat had never been seen on that side of the mountain—nothing but hunting-shirts. I marched with drums beating and colors flying, and some one seeing the troops, carried the news to Staunton that Tarleton had crossed the mountain, and the legislature then sitting there ran off again; but learning the mistake, rallied and returned the next day. In the morning I entered the town. There, for a few days, I heard Patrick Henry, Richard Henry Lee, George Nicholas, and my neighbor, Mann Page, of Mansfield."

Judge Brooke's narrative proceeds: "When I arrived at Staunton, Col. Davis, whom I found there, insisted on retaining me in that service, but Capt. Henning Gaines, who belonged to Harrison's regiment of artillery, ordered me to join my corps as speedily as I could in the army of the Marquis, and furnished me with his horses and servant to do so. In a few days I left Staunton, and took the road, by what is now called Port Republic, to cross the ridge at Swift Run Gap. A curious incident occurred; one of the horses was taken lame, and I stopped at a smith's shop to have his shoes repaired. The people were all Dutch, and spoke no English; and seeing me in regimentals, they took me for a British officer, and detained me for a time as their prisoner, until one of them came who understood English, and I showed him my commission and he let me pass." [From a communication by Maj. J. McCue, in the *Staunton Spectator*.]

Yet there was good reason for anticipating an inroad by Tarleton. The first rumor of it seems to have arisen on Saturday, but on Sunday the report was apparently confirmed. On the latter day, the people of Tinkling Spring congregation were assembled as usual for worship, when a strange man, arrested in the vicinity, was brought to the church. This man was one of four who had been captured, but the others had escaped. He was dressed partly in the uniform of a British soldier, and was supposed to be a spy sent forward by Tarleton. The excitement at the church may be imagined. The pastor addressed the congregation, urging the men to obtain arms and hasten to Rockfish Gap. But what should be done with the prisoner? A guard of several men could not be spared, and a young man named Long, who had carried his trusty rifle to church, volunteered to bring the stranger to Staunton and lodge him in jail. By command of Long, the prisoner marched on before and moved obedient to orders till they arrived at Christian's Creek. There, Long wished to take off his moccasins, but the spy persisted in coming on, wading the stream in his jack-boots. Long repeatedly warned him to stop, and finally shot him down. After a few days he died, confessing that he was a British soldier and had been sent in advance by Tarleton. These facts were related to the writer by the late Joseph Long, who was a son of the young man who shot the spy.

The alarm having arisen, riders traversed the county to notify the people. The men hastened to the mountain, while the women and children hid their silver spoons and other portable articles of

value. Two venerable men, who were children in 1781, many years ago related to the writer their recollections of the time. One of these remembered that his father came home from Tinkling Spring church and took down his gun, to the boy's great astonishment, as it was the sabbath day; the other told of his anxiety to bury his only treasure, a little bar of lead. The wife of Col. William Lewis is said to have dispatched her younger sons, mere boys, to the mountain—the older sons being with the Northern army—with the injunction to do their duty, or return no more.

By Monday morning the mountain at Rockfish Gap was lined with men. Some, who could not procure guns, provided piles of stones to hurl at the invaders. The force under Gen. McDowell, encountered by Lieut. Brooke, was doubtless composed of the hasty lines referred to.

On the day the alarm first arose the Rev. William Graham, of Lexington, was coming to Staunton. He heard the exciting report before he arrived here, and immediately returned home to call out the militia. With a company of men he went on the next day to Rockfish Gap. Finding that Tarleton did not come, part of the militia, accompanied by Mr. Graham, went in quest of the enemy, and joined La Fayette below Charlottesville. During a short stay with the army Mr. Graham had evening prayers in the company to which he belonged. The services were not well attended, except on one occasion, when a battle was anticipated; then the men generally assembled, and appeared to listen with much attention. [Foote, First Series, page 454.]

At some period during the war an accusation was preferred by Thomas Hughes against Zachariah Johnston, one of the delegates from Augusta, of instigating opposition in the county to the act of assembly for raising troops. While the legislature sat at Staunton, June 14, Mr. Henry reported that Mr. Johnston had uniformly recommended obedience to the law, and that the accusation was groundless.

On June 23, the assembly adjourned at Staunton, to meet in Richmond in October following.

On October 19, 1781, Cornwallis surrendered to Washington, at Yorktown, and the war of the revolution ended, although peace was not formally concluded till 1783.

As a part of the history of the county, we mention that the Presbytery of Hanover, about the year 1773, determined to establish "Augusta Academy," and it was at first proposed to locate the institution at Staunton. At a meeting of presbytery, in April, 1775, persons were appointed to solicit subscriptions in behalf of the academy, among whom were William McPheeters and John Trimble at North Mountain; Thomas Stuart and Walter Davis, at Tinkling Spring; Samson Matthews, at Staunton; and George Matthews, George Moffett and James Allen, in Augusta congregation.

In May, 1776, the presbytery determined to locate the school on Timber Ridge, and at the same time the Rev. William Graham was elected rector. Trustees were also appointed: Rev. John Brown, Rev. James Waddell, Thomas and Andrew Lewis, William Preston, Samson Matthews, Samuel McDowell, George Moffett and others.

In 1779 the school was removed to Lexington, and called "Liberty Hall." An act of incorporation by the legislature was obtained in 1782, and the institution has now become "Washington and Lee University."

The subject of religious liberty occupied the attention of the people of Virginia as soon as the revolutionary war arose. At a meeting of the legislature, in October, 1779, all laws providing salaries for ministers were repealed, and it was generally understood that no denomination should be favored in that respect; but the scheme of a

"general assessment," for the benefit of ministers of all sects, was proposed and advocated by Patrick Henry and others.

In April, 1780, Hanover presbytery met at Tinkling Spring, and held a session on the 28th at the house of Mr. Waddell. A memorial, praying the legislature to abstain from interference with the government of the church, was prepared, and Messrs. Waddell and Graham were appointed to request Col. McDowell and Capt. Johnston, the delegates from Augusta, to present the memorial to the assembly. Another memorial on the subject was adopted at Bethel, May 19, 1784, and still another in October, 1784. A convention of Presbyterians was held at Bethel, August 10, 1785, and a final memorial, drawn by Mr. Graham, was adopted on the 13th. The legislature met October 17, 1785, and on December 17, Mr. Jefferson's bill "for establishing religious freedom" became a law.

CHAPTER V.

FROM THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION TO THE YEAR 1812.

THE immigrants who came to America from Ireland before the war of the Revolution were almost exclusively Protestant Dissenters. The influx of Irish people of a different faith began at a later day. But before the war, many German people found their way to the new world, and several of our valley counties were largely settled by them. They were, for the most part, Lutherans and Tunkers, or German Baptists, and have transmitted their religious faith, with their steady habits, to their posterity. They brought their German Bibles with them, and for several generations the language of the fatherland was used by them in their households. Indeed, many of the older people never learned to read nor speak English. Before the close of the revolution a considerable part of the best lands in Augusta county was occupied by people of this race.

Peter Hanger, the ancestor of the numerous family of that name, settled in Augusta in 1750, it is said, having been born in Germany, but coming here from Pennsylvania. He lived at Spring Farm, near Staunton, and died there in 1801. In 1780 he was appointed a justice of the peace, but declined to qualify. One of his sons, of the same name, lived at the place on the Winchester road, since called Willow Spout, but formerly widely known as "Hanger's," during the days of Bockett's stages, Knoxville teams and militia musters.

The most numerous family in the county, and possibly in the country, is that known as Koiner, Coiner, and Coyner. Michael Koiner came to America, from Germany, between 1740 and 1745, and settled in Pennsylvania. He had ten sons and three daughters. Two of his sons—George Adam and Casper—came to Augusta county, and in 1787 were followed by their father, who proceeded to purchase farms. His other sons—Martin, Philip, Frederick and George Michael—also came to Augusta, and settled and died here. The three eldest sons were soldiers in the revolutionary war. The ancestor died in 1796, and was buried in Trinity churchyard, near South river.

Before the revolutionary war arose, the descendants of the early Scotch-Irish settlers of Augusta began to scatter abroad. Some of the Lewises, Breckenridges and McClanahans went to Botetourt county. Andrew Lewis and Robert McClanahan, Jr., were living in Botetourt before the battle of Point Pleasant. Thomas Lewis, living near Port Republic, became a citizen of Rockingham after that county was organized. William Lewis

removed to the Sweet Springs about the year 1790. Some of the family located in Bath county. Soon after the revolution, several of the Breckenridges went to Kentucky, and from one of them descended the distinguished men of that name. Immediately after the war, in 1783, the Rev. Dr. Waddell, of Tinkling Spring, who came to Augusta from Lancaster county in 1776, removed to the neighborhood of Gordonsville, where he died in 1803. He was succeeded at Tinkling Spring by the Rev. John McCue, a native of Nelson county. Both Mr. Waddell and Mr. McCue, while living in the county, preached more or less steadily in Staunton. There was, however, no regular Presbyterian church organization in Staunton till 1804. The early Presbyterian settlers were generally engaged in farming and grazing, and sought rural shades in which to worship, turning away, apparently, from towns and villages. Hence, throughout the valley their country churches antedate those in the towns.

Col. Robert Gamble, a native of Augusta, removed to Richmond about the year 1783, and there became widely known and highly influential. He was the father-in-law of William Wirt, Governor Cabell and Chancellor Harper, of South Carolina, and one of his sons became governor of Florida, and the other governor of Missouri. His death occurred in 1810.

But many other persons came into the county from time to time.

Col. Robert Porterfield, a native of Pennsylvania, but living in Jefferson or Berkeley county when the revolutionary war arose, settled here, on South river, near Waynesborough, at the close of the war. He attained the rank of colonel in the Continental army, and was afterward made general of Virginia militia.

Archibald Stuart, a native of Augusta, but reared in Rockbridge county, located in Staunton, in 1785, to practice law. While a very young man he was elected by the people of Botetourt to represent them in the state legislature, residence of delegates in the county not being required at that time.

Jacob Peck, long an enterprising citizen, was living here in 1780, having come from Pennsylvania.

Jacob Swoope and John Boys came to Staunton from Philadelphia, in 1789, and embarked in mercantile business. Both of them married here, but the wife of the latter dying in a short time, he returned to Philadelphia, where he died in 1798. Mr. Swoope remarried in Staunton, and acquired wealth and prominence.

Sometime between 1785 and 1790, several persons came to Staunton from different places, all of whom were prominent and influential in their day, and some of whom reared large families. We refer to John Wayt, (the senior of that name,) Joseph Cowan, Andrew Barry, Peter Heiskell, Michael Garber, Lawrence Tremper, and a school teacher named Clarke. Mr. Wayt came from Orange county. He was a merchant, a magistrate and high sheriff, several times a member of the legislature, and long active in all affairs concerning church and state. He died in 1831, leaving no child. Mr. Cowan and Mr. Barry were natives of Ireland, and leading merchants, Mr. Garber came from Pennsylvania, and Mr. Heiskell from Frederick county. Lawrence Tremper was born in New York and married there. He was by trade a leather-breeches maker. During the administration of Washington, he was appointed postmaster at Staunton, and held the office continuously till his death, in 1841. He also retailed drugs, patent medicines and candy. Mr. Clarke, the school teacher, came from Pennsylvania, like so many others. He left four sons, Samuel, John, William and Thomas, who long resided in the county, and

the first of whom, in a quiet way, filled a large space in the community for many years.

Three brothers came to Staunton from Nelson county, probably about the year 1790, Chesley, Jacob and William Kinney. The first named was clerk of several of the courts which sat here, and the father of five sons and a daughter. Jacob Kinney was a lawyer. His only child was a daughter, the wife of the late Erasmus Stribling, and mother of Dr. F. T. Stribling and others. William Kinney, Sr., was a bachelor, and pursued no regular business during the latter years of his life; but he was noted for genial traits which made him a welcome guest in many homes.

An act of Assembly, passed November 6, 1787, added twenty-five acres of land belonging to Alexander St. Clair, to the town of Staunton. This addition has always been known as Newtown. Other land, belonging to Judge Stuart, in the north-east part of the town, was added in 1811.

The earliest returns of commissioners of the revenue for Augusta county, found in our local archives, are for the year 1787. Parts of Bath and Pendleton counties were then included in Augusta. The commissioners of the revenue were, James Ramsey, Joseph Bell and Charles Cameron. Alexander McClanahan was clerk of the county court. The number of horses and mules in the county was 7,747; cattle 15,692; ordinaries 5, kept by John Basong, Windle Grise, Peter Heiskell, James McGonigle and Thomas Smith; practicing physicians 4, Drs. William Grose, Alexander Humphreys, Alexander Long and Hugh Richie. It seems that lawyers were not taxed, as none were assessed. The number of gigs was 2, owned by John Ermitage and Robert Richardson. There were no four-wheeled riding carriages in the county.

Pendleton county was formed from Augusta, Rockingham and Hardy, in 1788; and Bath from Augusta, Botetourt and Greenbrier, in 1791, when Augusta was reduced to its present dimensions about 33 miles long and 29 miles wide.

In the state convention of 1788, which ratified the Constitution of the United States, Augusta was represented by Zachariah Johnston and Archibald Stuart.

Until the year 1789, the county court was the only court of record which sat in Staunton. As stated heretofore, it had an extensive jurisdiction in law and chancery. The higher law tribunal, called the General Court, composed of gentlemen "learned in the law," sat in Richmond. There was one chancellor for the whole state, who also held his court in Richmond. George Wythe, the signer of the Declaration of Independence, was the chancellor for twenty years, from 1777.

In 1789 the legislature passed an act establishing district courts of law. The counties were arranged in districts, in each of which two judges of the general court were required to hold terms. Augusta, Rockbridge, Rockingham and Pendleton constituted a district, and the court sat in Staunton. Judges Mercer and Parker held the first court here. Judges Tyler, Carrington, Tucker (the elder) and others also sat here at different times.

The first clerk of the district court at Staunton was James Lyle. He was succeeded, in 1793, by John Coalter, afterward judge; he by Micajah Coalter, and he by Chesley Kinney.

Archibald Stuart, of Staunton, was elected a judge of the general court in 1799, and for some years presided, with an associate, in the district courts. At the time of his election he was a member of the legislature.

The tide of Indian warfare had rolled back from Augusta county as white settlers located in the west, but it did not cease on the frontier till 1794. In August of that year Gen. Anthony Wayne, at the head of a considerable force, encountered and

routed a large body of Indians at the rapids of the Great Maumee river, in Ohio. Gen. Wayne had been distinguished during the revolutionary war, but his last achievement made him a popular hero. The wonder is how he escaped becoming President of the United States. He, however, had the honor of giving his name to divers and sundry places. Waynesborough, in Augusta county, which was founded about that time, was called for him. The Wayne Tavern, in Staunton, was another of his namesakes. This tavern, which stood at the north-west corner of Beverley and New streets, invited travelers to take shelter there by its old-fashioned swinging sign, on which a native artist exhausted his skill in trying to paint a likeness of "Mad Anthony." The Washington Tavern stood on the present site of the Virginia Hotel, and displayed on its sign a portrait of the Father of his Country.

John Wise, a soldier under Wayne at the Maumee, settled in Staunton before the close of the century. He was originally a printer, and at one time published a newspaper here.

Mr. Jefferson, while residing at Monticello, previous to his election to the presidency, turned his attention, among his various projects, to the manufacture of nails, and wished to establish an agency in Staunton. In June, 1795, he wrote to Archibald Stuart, his former pupil and personal and political friend, inclosing some "nail cards," which he wished put into the hands of a substantial and punctual merchant. He suggested a Mr. Stuart, Mr. St. Clair, or Gamble & Grattan. The next year, in January, he wrote again on the same subject. The nail business was not prospering, evidently; but we are gratified to find that even at that early day Staunton was considered a better market, at least for nails, than Warren or Warminster. In February following, the price of nails had gone up in Philadelphia, and the "Sage of Monticello" was encouraged. He advised his Staunton correspondent to embark in the manufacture of potash, and assured him there were "millions in it." The tradesmanlike way he wrote about "penny brads" and the profits of potash, remind one of Dr. Johnson playing the business man at the sale of Thrall's brewery. From a letter, written at Philadelphia, June 8, 1798, Mr. Jefferson being vice-president, it seems that John McDowell was then the agent at Staunton. Mr. Jefferson was anxious for a remittance, as for six months he had been advancing money for nail rods. McDowell threw up the agency in 1799, and by that time, it appears, the "naHery" was near its end.

Before the close of the century, some attempts were made to establish factories in the county. In 1790, an act was passed by the legislature, authorizing Alexander St. Clair, William Chambers, John Boys, Robert Grattan, Robert Gamble and others to raise by lottery three hundred pounds, to be applied by them in erecting a paper mill near Staunton, "for the use of Gideon Morgan and Peter Burkhart." And in 1791, another act authorized trustees to raise four thousand dollars by lottery for repairing and completing Smith Tandy's "bleaching mill" near Staunton.

In the year 1798, Staunton was visited by Isaac Weld, an English traveler, whose book of "Travels through the States of North America," etc., was published in London, in 1799. In his pages we find some description of Staunton and the surrounding country at the date of the visit. He says:—"As I passed along it" (the road traversing the valley), "I met with great numbers of people from Kentucky and the new State of Tennessee going towards Philadelphia and Baltimore, and with many others going in a contrary direction, 'to explore,' as they call it, that is to search for lands conveniently situated for new settlements in the western country. These people all travel on horseback, with pistols or swords, and a large blanket

folded up under their saddles, which last they use for sleeping in when obliged to pass the night in the woods. * * * Thirty miles further on" (from Lexington) "stands Staunton. This town carries on a considerable trade with the back country, and contains nearly two hundred dwellings, mostly built of stone, together with a church. This was the first place on the entire road from Lynchburg, one hundred and fifty miles distant, and which I was about ten days in traveling, where I was able to get a bit of fresh meat, excepting indeed on passing the Blue Mountains, where they brought me some venison that had been just killed. I went on fifty miles further from Staunton, before I got any again. * * *

"In every part of America a European is surprised at finding so many men with military titles, * * * but nowhere, I believe, is there such a superfluity of these military personages as in the town of Staunton; there is hardly a decent person in it, excepting lawyers and medical men, but what is a colonel, a major, or a captain. * * * In Staunton there are two or three corps" (volunteer military companies), "one of cavalry, the other of artillery. These are formed chiefly of men who find a certain degree of amusement in exercising as soldiers, and who are also induced to associate by the vanity of appearing in regimentals."

Rochefoucault, the French traveler, visited Staunton in 1797. He does not give a flattering picture of the place, but as a faithful annalist we reproduce it, protesting, however, that Staunton and its people are very different now-a-days. He says there were eight inns here, fifteen to eighteen stores, and about eight hundred inhabitants. Two market days were kept weekly, but badly furnished with provisions. Fresh meat sold at sixpence per pound (eight cents); flour at eleven dollars per barrel. A newspaper was published twice a week. (?) The inhabitants, like the generality of Virginians, were fond of gambling and betting. The traveler witnessed here two miserable horse races. Manners were much like those of Richmond, nor were the people "actuated by a superior desire to discharge the debts which they contracted." During his stay at the inn, he "saw great numbers of travelers pass by, merchants or sellers of land, going to Greenbrier and Carolina, or persons on their way to the medicinal springs." The goods sold by the storekeepers were brought from Baltimore or Philadelphia.

At the time the French traveler was in Staunton, Bob Bailey, the noted gambler, made his headquarters here. He was an elegant gentleman, very insinuating, and very likely sought the acquaintance of the stranger. A few years afterwards, he was in the hands of the district court, upon the charge of swindling, but fled to escape the penalty of the law.

Before the year 1800, Staunton was thronged every summer and fall with people going to and returning from "The Springs." The Warm and Sweet Springs were then much frequented by invalids and pleasure seekers.

Dr. William Boys, long a prominent physician in Staunton, and the first physician of the Western Lunatic Asylum, came here from Philadelphia, about the beginning of the present century.

From the books of the Commissioners of the Revenue for the year 1800, we obtain some interesting facts. The number of tithables in the county, including Staunton, was 3,236. The number of horses was 6,088. The cattle were not listed. Four-wheeled riding carriages were taxed, but gigs were not; and the number of the former in the county was exactly two, viz.: Thomas Martin's "stage," and Archibald Stuart's "chariot." The total tax was \$1,557.78.

Twenty-five merchants doing business in the county, paid license tax the same year, and among

them appear the still familiar names of John McDowell, Jacob Swoope, Andrew Barry, John Wayt, Joseph Cowan, Alexander St. Clair, Peter Hanger, and others.

Dr. Alexander Humphreys, who died in Staunton, in 1802, and whose family afterwards removed to Kentucky, seems to have been the solitary practicing physician in the county. Still the lawyers were exempt from license tax. Surely there were lawyers here at the time. Gen. Samuel Blackburn was living here, and was at the zenith of his fame as an advocate. He afterwards removed to his estate, called the Wilderness, in Bath county, where he spent the latter years of his life.

In the year, 1802, another change was made in the judiciary system of the state. Four chancery districts were then constituted, and John Brown was elected by the legislature, "Judge of the Court of Chancery for the Upper District." At the time of his election, Judge Brown resided in Hardy county; but he immediately removed to Staunton, where he was required to hold terms of his court. He sat also in Lewisburg and Wytheville. The first chancery court was held in Staunton, July 1, 1802. Henry J. Peyton was the first clerk of this court, and William S. Eskridge was the second and last. William Kinney, Sr., was its "Sergeant-at-Arms." Among the lawyers who qualified to practice in the court, on the day it opened, were Edmond Randolph, James Breckenridge, Daniel Sheffey, Chapman Johnson and Edward Graham. Of these only Mr. Johnson resided in Staunton. Mr. Sheffey lived at that time in Wythe, and did not remove to Staunton till some twenty years afterwards.

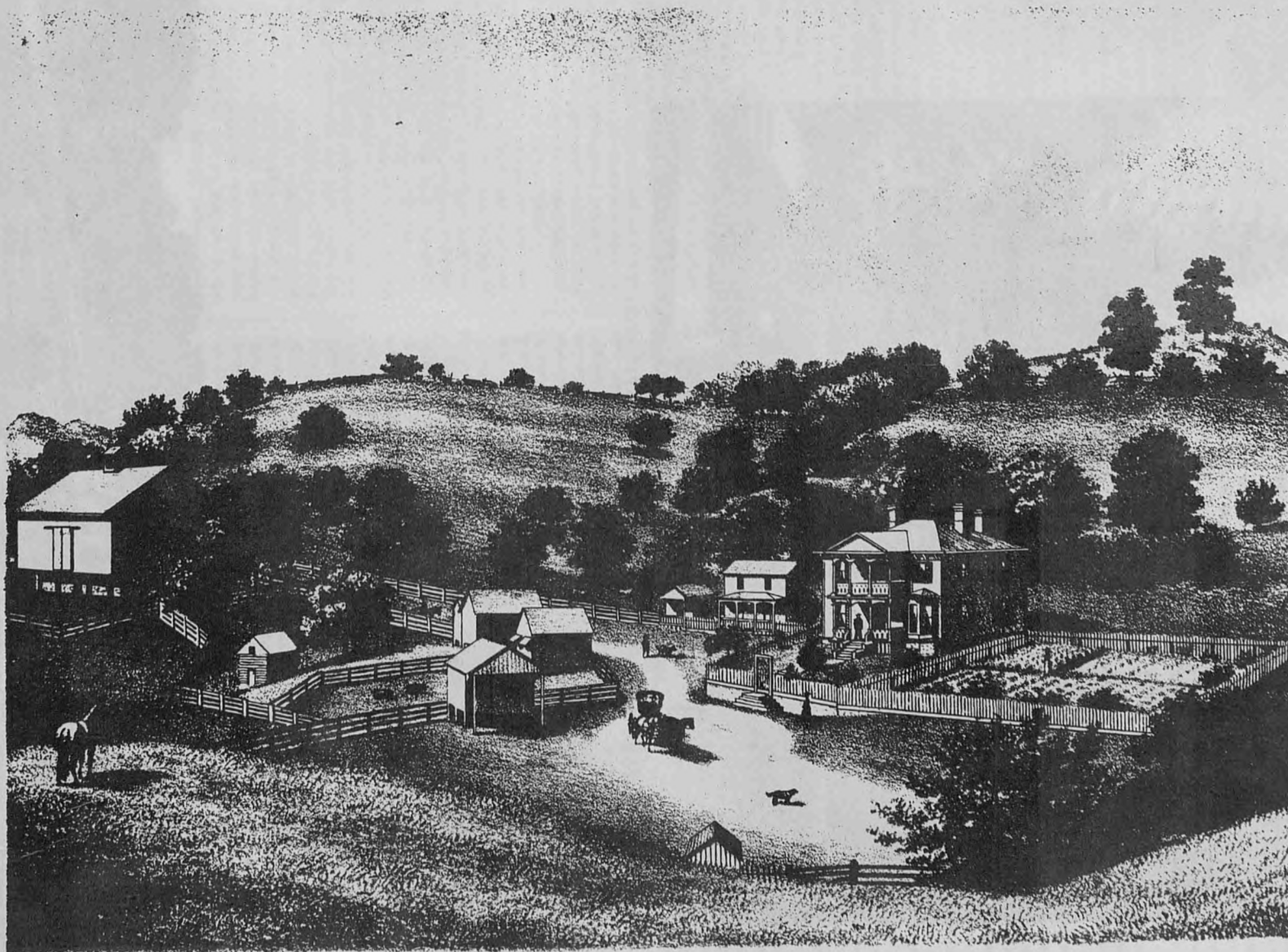
Judge Brown died in 1826. His successor was Judge Allen Taylor, of Botetourt, who presided in the court till 1831, when another change was made in the judiciary system.

In connection with the foregoing, we may state here, that, in 1809, circuit courts of law, instead of district courts, were established by act of assembly. The counties of the state were arranged in circuits, and one of the judges of the general court was required to hold terms in every county. Judge Stuart then became sole judge of the circuit of which Augusta was a part. Chesley Kinney, by appointment of the judge, was clerk of the circuit court of law for Augusta county, till 1828, when his son, Nicholas C. Kinney, was appointed.

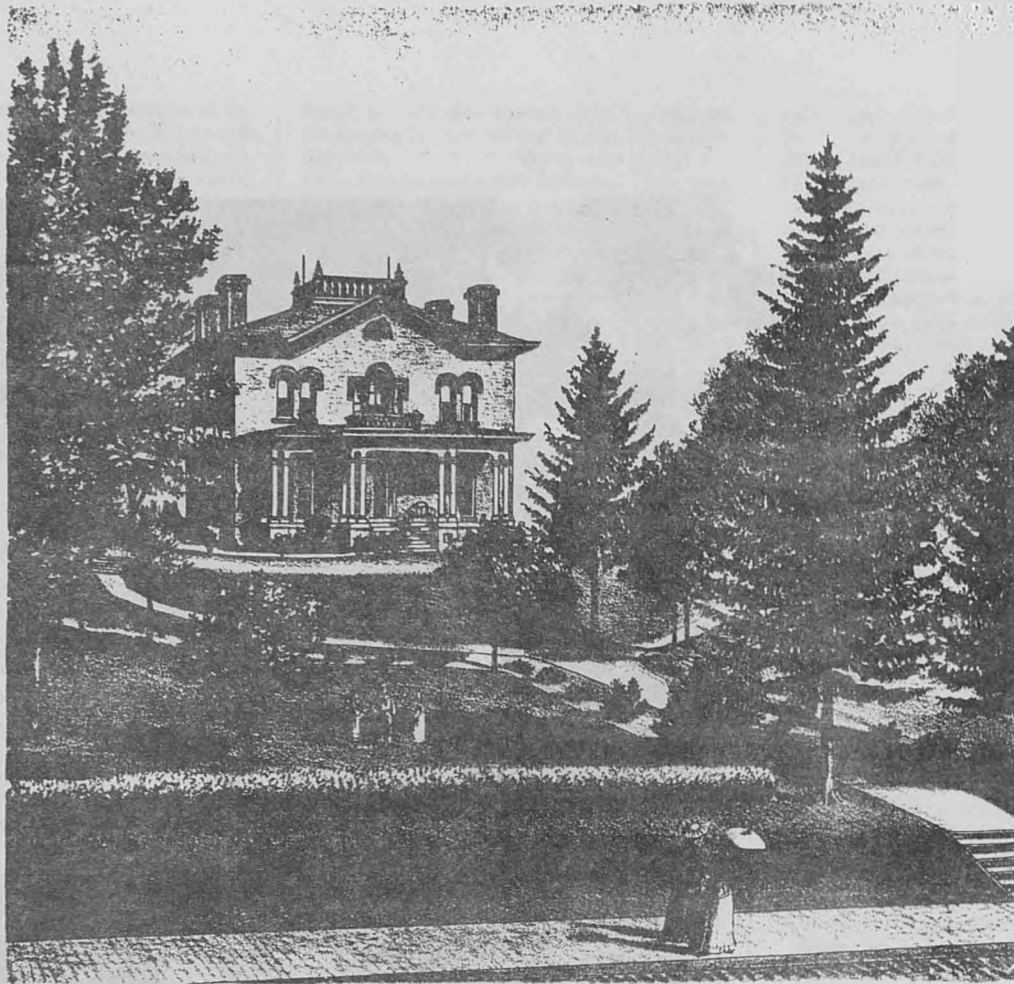
The system of two distinct courts, one of law and the other of chancery, continued till the year 1831.

From the year 1800 to the year 1860, emigration and immigration were the order of the day in Augusta county. The sons of farmers and others, descendants of early settlers, were enticed away by the low prices of rich lands in the west—Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and Missouri. Often whole families sold out their lands here, and left in search of new homes near the frontier of civilization; and sometimes several families, neighbors and friends, went together to form a congenial settlement elsewhere. The emigrants packed in wagons their provisions, clothing, bedding, and such cherished articles as they could not leave behind, and spent weeks on the road, camping out at night. The descendants of Augusta people in the states just named, must number many thousands. Some forty years ago, a citizen of Augusta was visiting relations in central Illinois, when two other citizens of the county arrived on horseback. The latter stated that after crossing the Ohio river, they had spent every night at the house of an Augusta man.

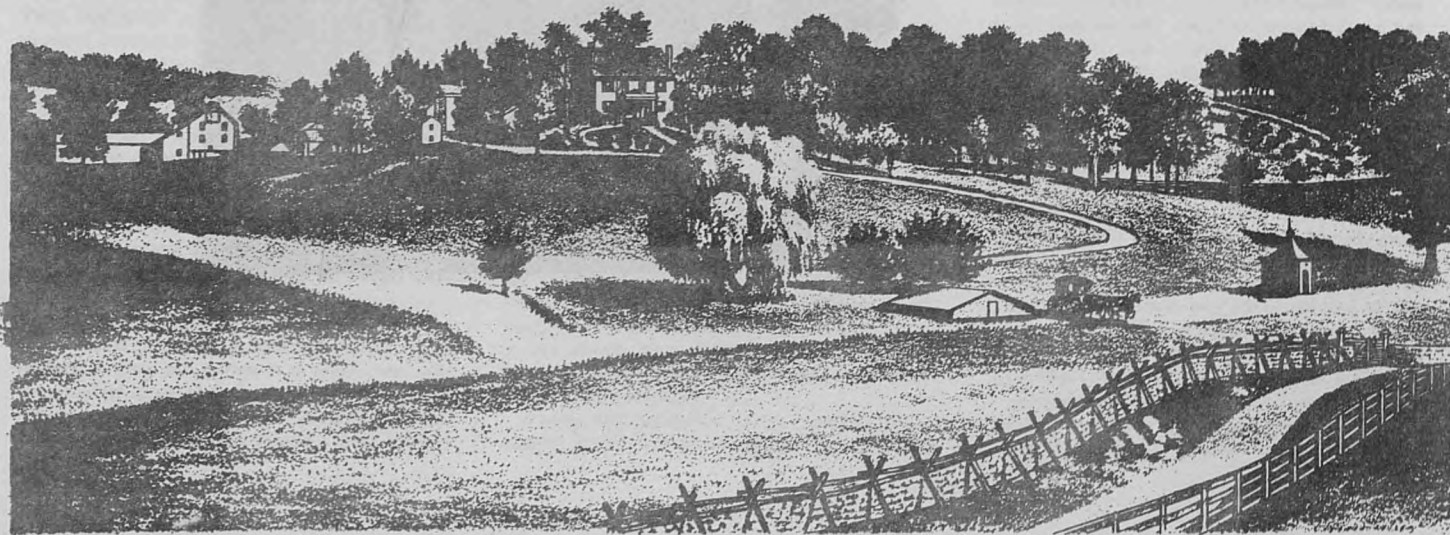
The places of the emigrants were taken by immigrants from Pennsylvania and the lower valley, generally people of German descent—the most



RESIDENCE OF JOHN W. FAUVER, — RIVER HEADS DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF DR. A. M. FAUNTLEROY, STAUNTON, VA.



"OAK HILL DAVIS A. KAYSER PROP'R, BEVERLEY MANOR DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.

thrifty of farmers—and thus the county suffered no loss in population.

For some years Mississippi was the Eldorado which attracted young men who desired to embark in business—lawyers, doctors and clerks; many of these, however, drifted back to their old homes. Our farming and grazing population, were never much inclined towards the cotton-growing states and territories.

Between the years 1800 and 1812, the county received important accessions of professional and business men from abroad. Most of these located in Staunton, and became part and parcel of the county. John C. Sowers, the merchant, Briscoe G. Baldwin, Erasmus Stribling, and the Eskridge brothers came from Frederick county, or thereabouts. Chapman Johnson came from Louisa county, and the Waddells from the same section. John H. Peyton, the lawyer, and John Randolph, the Middlebrook merchant, came from Stafford county. James A. Frazier, a native of Ireland, was employed as a store boy at Jennings' Gap by Robert McDowell, who afterwards failed in business. Young Frazier held the position, and in the course of time built up an extensive business and one of the largest fortunes ever accumulated in the county. During the earlier part of his career Augusta merchants dealt almost exclusively in Philadelphia. They generally made the trip to market, or "below," as the phrase went, twice a year, on horseback, two or more traveling together, carrying Mexican dollars in their saddle-bags.

Jacob Swoope, of Staunton, was the member of congress from the Augusta district in the years 1809-1811. Party spirit ran high in those days. Mr. Swoope was leader of the Federalists and Judge Stuart of the Republicans. Both parties had balls in Staunton, to which their adherents in the county were invited, with their wives and children. Each had also street processions, headed by its chief. Mr. Swoope's competitor when he was elected was Daniel Smith, then a young lawyer in Rockingham. Swoope could speak German, while Smith could not, and the German people of the district generally voted for the former.

Mr. Swoope declined a re-election, and Gen. Samuel Blackburn, then of Bath, was announced as the Federalist candidate. William McCoy, of Pendleton, came forward as the Republican candidate. The election was held on April court day, 1811. At that time, and for long afterwards, elections were not held as now, on the same day, throughout the state, or even district, but the people of each county voted at their April court. Augusta, Bath and Hardy gave majorities for Blackburn, but Pendleton and Rockingham, the other two counties of the district, carried the day for McCoy, who was elected by a majority of 135 votes. At the same time Chapman Johnson was elected to represent Augusta in the state senate, and A. Fulton and A. Anderson were elected delegates. The whole vote cast in Augusta at the election was 785, the right of suffrage being restricted to freeholders.

William McCoy held the seat in congress till 1833. Daniel Sheffey represented the Wythe district in the house of representatives from 1809 to 1817, and afterwards removed to Staunton. In due time he presented himself as the Federalist candidate against McCoy, but in vain. On election day in Pendleton he was there to confront his adversary at home; but on his return reported that "It was nothing but Hiner, Greiner and McCoy," the first two being candidates for the legislature.

The Staunton Academy, a high school for boys, was incorporated in 1790, but the building seems not to have been completed till about 1810. Judge Stuart gave the lot. A part of the funds employed was raised by general subscription in the county, and a part was donated by the state out of proceeds

of sale of glebe lands. The masonic fraternity also had an interest in the building, occupying an upper room as their hall. In the year named the principals of the academy were James G. Waddell and Bartholomew Fuller. The former taught the classics and the latter mathematics.

For nearly seventy years—until the building was turned over to the trustees of public free schools—a succession of teachers had charge of the academy. In 1833, Lyttelton Waddell and William D. Cooke became joint principals. The latter continued for a short term only, but the former conducted the school for more than twenty years. During most of that time the institution was highly prosperous, attracting many pupils from abroad.

Col. Robert Porterfield was elected brigadier-general of state troops in 1810, and appointed Mr. John H. Peyton his chief of staff.

The population of the county in 1810 was 14,338, Staunton 1,223, Waynesborough 250, Greenville 162, and Middlebrook 66.

Isaac Collett, a famous printer in his day, became proprietor of the "Republican Farmer," a newspaper which had been started in Staunton by William G. Lyford, in 1808. In his first issue Collett announced that he was "decidedly a federal character." He also published an extract from a speech in congress by Daniel Sheffey, in opposition to the threatened war with Great Britain. But the war came on apace, notwithstanding.

CHAPTER VI.

FROM THE YEAR 1812 TO THE YEAR 1860.

A MAJORITY of the voters of Augusta county no doubt sympathized with Daniel Sheffey and other statesmen of the same school, in their opposition to the measures which brought on the war of 1812; but when the war arose, no unpatriotic spirit was exhibited in the county. The war, however, did not approach our borders, and very few of our people actually participated in the conflict. Nicholas C. Kinney and George Eskridge, young lieutenants in the regular army, served for a time on the northern frontier.

When the state was invaded and troops were called for, many military companies were raised in the county. The captains are given by Peyton as follows: Briscoe G. Baldwin, Chapman Johnson, John C. Sowers, John Matthews, Hugh Young, Abraham Lange, Christian Morris, Joseph Larew, Samuel Doake, Samuel Steele, Alexander Givens, George C. Robertson, W. G. Dudley and James Kirke. John Sperry and John H. Speck were commissaries. Capt. Sowers' company was artillery, and Capt. Doake's, cavalry. The infantry companies, or some of them, were quartered in barracks east of Betsy Bell for a time, and afterward ordered to Richmond. Capt. Sowers' company was taken to Norfolk, and also the artillery company of Capt. Henry McClung, then of Rockbridge, but afterward for many years a citizen of Staunton. We believe that none of the companies were ever required to meet the enemy.

The privations during the war of 1812 were similar to those experienced in the late war. The mothers of our community were wont to tell how the price of common calico went up to a dollar a yard, and how at their tea parties they had no tea, and no cake because sugar could not be obtained.

For many years there were two relics of the war left at Staunton. Capt. Sowers' field pieces—six-pounders—remained here until long after the gun carriages had rotted away; but the town boys managed to load and discharge them every Fourth of July and Christmas day. It was not uncommon

to find, just when the guns were required for action, that the enemy, in the shape of some mischievous urchin, had driven nails into the touch-holes. The spikes were withdrawn, however, what ever the labor might be, just as the pieces were shifted from Garber's Hill to Green Hill, whenever the occasion made a change of position necessary. At length an extremely particular governor came into office, and by his order the guns were seized and taken to the state arsenal at Lexington. Many old Staunton boys must remember our feelings of bereavement and indignation at the ruthless act. But there was no help for it. Staunton was left defenseless, as far as artillery was concerned, and from that day there has been here hardly any observance of the Fourth of July.

By the year 1815, many of the elements of wealth in the county had increased very considerably, compared with 1800. Some of the statistics of that time strike us now as rather curious. In the year 1802, property in the town of Staunton was separately assessed for taxation, for the first time; but the following figures of 1815 embrace the town as well as the two country revenue districts. The number of horses was 7,544, cattle 17,987, ice-houses 10, carpets over \$20 in value 19, cut-glass decanters 102, pianos 17, Venetian blinds 23, two-wheeled riding carriages 50, and four-wheeled riding carriages 13. There were five four-wheeled riding carriages in the first revenue district of the county, and the aristocratic owners of these vehicles were William Black, Sr., Rev. William Calhoun, Mrs. Nancy Kinney, James McNutt and Edward Valentine. In the next year John McDowell appears as the owner of a "phaeton." The owners of carriages and chairs (gigs) in the second district, the same year (1816), were Joseph Bell, Sr., Joseph Bell, Jr., Andrew Barry, Charles Dickenson, James A. Frazier, David Golladay, John Harman, Peter Hanger, John Lawrence, James Marshall and Rev. John McCue.

The number of merchants in Staunton, in 1815, was thirteen, and the number of ordinaries, five.

The lawyers at the same time were Briscoe G. Baldwin, James Crawford, Samuel Clarke, William Clarke, Chapman Johnson, William Kinney, Jr., John H. Peyton and Lyttelton Waddell. The town doctors were William Boys, Thomas Clarke, Edmund Edrington, William King, George G. McIntosh and Addison Waddell. The country doctors who paid license tax were James Allen and James Wilson.

We anticipate our narrative so far as to give some of the statistics of 1883, for the sake of comparison with the foregoing. The following figures embrace the whole county, including Staunton: In the year 1883, the number of horses, mules, etc., was 8,688; cattle, 19,359; carriages of all descriptions, wagons and carts, 4,432, and the value of pianos, organs, etc., as assessed for taxation, was \$41,359. The first cost of the musical instruments was probably \$80,000 to \$90,000.

From 1815 to 1824-5, nothing of interest occurred in the history of the county. The farmers delved, lawyers and doctors pursued their professions, mechanics toiled, and the ministers of religion were faithful to their calling.

In the year 1818, the Rev. John McCue, who had filled a large space in the county, was thrown from his horse and killed, one sabbath morning, while on his way to Tinkling Spring church. In or about the same year the Presbyterians of Staunton erected their first church building. The Methodists had long before had a church of their own. The Episcopalians, about 1811, re-occupied the old parish church, but had no regular rector till 1820, when the Rev. Dr. Stephens located here. For some fourteen or fifteen years the parish church was occupied by Episcopalians and Presbyterians on alternate Sundays.

During the time alluded to above, and for long afterward, the Presbyterian congregations of the county were served by a number of able and venerable ministers, such as are seldom found in close proximity. We can do little more than name some of them.

The Rev. Wm. Calboon came to the county in 1803, and till 1823 was pastor of the united congregations of Staunton and Hebron. Afterward, for many years, he was pastor of Hebron alone.

The Rev. Conrad Speece, D.D., a native of Bedford county, was pastor of Augusta church from 1813 to 1836. He cultivated general literature and wrote on a variety of subjects. He was eminent as a preacher, a public-spirited citizen, and no mean poet. The hymn beginning, "Blest Jesus, when thy cross I view," found in most church collections, was written by him.

The Rev. John Hendren, D.D., pastor of Mossy Creek and Union churches, was born in Ireland, but reared and educated in Lexington. He conducted a classical school at his residence in this county for many years, of wide-spread reputation, at which many prominent men were educated.

The Rev. Francis McFarland, D.D., pastor of Bethel church, was also a native of Ireland, reared and educated in Western Pennsylvania.

The Rev. James C. Wilson, D.D., pastor of Tinkling Spring and Waynesborough, was a native of Rockbridge county.

All the ministers named were buried in the fields of their labor. Other denominations had ministers who were men of mark and influence, but none of them remained here long enough to become identified with the county.

In 1823 Kenton Harper, a young printer from Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, bought the establishment of Isaac Collett, and converted the "Republican Farmer" into the "Staunton Spectator," which he continued to publish until 1849. Some time before the arrival of Harper, Thomas J. Michie settled here to practice law, and in the course of time became widely known.

On March 8, 1824, the legislature passed an act chartering the "Staunton and James River Turnpike Company," with a capital of \$200,000, for the construction of a turnpike from Staunton to Scottsville, in Albemarle. The company was formed, and the road was made in due time. This was the first graded road in the county, and was doubtless a valuable improvement. Previously, Augusta farmers wagoned their produce to Richmond, the trip requiring at least two weeks. Now Scottsville became the market town, and for a large part of every year the road leading to it was lined with Augusta wagons. The trip was shortened, and time was therefore saved; but the labor was hardly less than before. The road, especially in Albemarle, was often impassable, being cut into deep ruts by the wagons after every rain; and sometimes being through its whole extent a "Slough of Despond." The broken parts of wagons scattered along the route were like the *disjecta membra* of a battle field. Over this road, or not at all, the Augusta farmer transported his flour, etc., to market. In order to concentrate the product and aid transportation, much grain was sent to market in the shape of whisky. The "Temperance Reformation" had not then arisen, and there was a distillery on nearly every large farm in the county.

In the year 1825, January 22, the legislature passed an act establishing the Western Lunatic Asylum. Five commissioners were appointed to select the site, Gen. B. G. Baldwin being one of them, and after considering other places, the asylum was finally located at Staunton. The act provided for only four acres of land, and restricted the expenditure for land and buildings to \$10,000. A further appropriation was made in 1827. As stated, the first physician was Dr. William Boys;

but during his term of service the appropriations were small, and the asylum was kept on a very moderate scale. Afterward the legislature became more liberal, and during the incumbency of Dr. F. T. Stribling as superintendent, the institution was greatly enlarged and improved.

One improvement generally leads to another; and the Scottsville turnpike having been made, the people thought it desirable to extend the road westward. Accordingly, in 1827, an act of the legislature was procured authorizing a company to raise \$50,000 by lottery to construct a road from Staunton "to the state road between the waters of the James and Kanawha rivers." L. L. Stevenson and James Points were the agents of the company for conducting the lottery. Such schemes are now wisely prohibited by law, but the country had not then waked up to the evils attending them. Some years earlier a lottery was announced in Staunton, to be superintended by two Presbyterian elders, who, before they died, considered the lottery a deadly sin. The road was made only from Staunton to Buffalo Gap, and those ten miles afterward became a part of the Staunton and Parkersburg Turnpike.

On October 5, 1829, a convention of delegates to revise the state constitution, assembled in Richmond. The delegates were elected by districts, and those from the district including Augusta were Chapman Johnson, Briscoe G. Baldwin, Saml. McD. Moore and William McCoy. Mr. Johnson had then removed to Richmond, but during his life he was identified with Augusta county. The convention adjourned January 15, 1830, and the new constitution was afterward ratified by the vote of the people. The right of suffrage was extended to housekeepers and heads of families who had duly paid their taxes, but the number of voters was not thereby greatly increased.

The constitution of 1829-30, made another change in the judiciary system of the state. The district courts of chancery were abolished, and law and chancery jurisdiction were vested in the same judge. The first session of the "circuit superior court of law and chancery for Augusta county" was held May 20, 1831, Judge Lucas P. Thompson, of Amherst county, presiding. John H. Peyton was appointed prosecuting attorney, and Nicholas C. Kinney clerk. Samuel Clark and Thomas J. Michie were appointed commissioners in chancery. Judge Thompson removed to Staunton some ten years after his elevation to the bench, and spent the remainder of his life here.

The Harrisonburg and Warm Springs Turnpike Company was chartered by the legislature January 29, 1830. This road passes through the northwest part of Augusta, and the charter provided that it should pass through Jennings' Gap and by Miller's iron works. By some means, however, Jennings' Gap was left out of the line of improvement.

The subjects which chiefly interested the people of Augusta in 1831, were the proposed valley railroad and the abolition of slavery.

The agitation in regard to the railroad was kept up for several years; and, in 1836, was vigorously renewed, but the scheme came to naught.

The people of the county seem to have been ripe in 1831-32, for the gradual abolition of slavery. John McCue, one of the delegates from Augusta, presented a memorial to the legislature in December, 1831, signed by 215 ladies, praying for emancipation. Similar petitions, numerous signed, were gotten up in the county. In presenting the memorial of the ladies, Mr. McCue delivered a vigorous speech in opposition to slavery. The contrary sentiment prevailed in the state; but at the next election, April court day, 1832, John McCue was returned to the legislature from Augusta. His colleague was Thomas Jefferson Stuart.

Early in 1832, politics were very lively in Au-

gusta. The followers of Henry Clay took steps to bring him forward as a candidate for the presidency. Among the active Clay men in the county were Judge Stuart and his sons, Gen. Porterfield, Samuel Clarke, Gen. Baldwin, the Kinneys, Waddells, Bells, Eskridges, Crawfords, McCues, Guys, Pattersons, Cochrans, Sowers, Michie, Harnsberger and others. The supporters of Gen. Jackson, though less numerous, were equally active. Among them were some who afterwards became Whigs, such as Mr. Peyton, W. W. Donaghe, Col. Robertson and Capt. Sterritt. But some of those who proved life-long adherents to the Democratic party, were then on hand in behalf of Old Hickory. A few of them were, Michael Garber, John Randolph, William A. Abney, L. L. Stevenson, Lewis Harman, James Points, the Baylors and Heiskells. Dr. Speece was a Jackson man, as far as he meddled in politics, and some of the other party sought to weaken his influence by attributing his partiality to the fact that Jackson was a Presbyterian. The Jackson men held a meeting February 8, 1832, and passed resolutions denouncing Clay and Calhoun for voting in the senate to reject the nomination of Van Buren as minister to England, "as a most disgraceful attempt to overthrow a patriotic rival." As the presidential election did not take place till 1836, the politicians were early in the field.

Gen. Jackson's route from the Hermitage to Washington was through Augusta, but he is said to have avoided Staunton, because of the popular opposition to him here.

Col. Robert Doak, a soldier of the Revolution, long a delegate in the legislature from Augusta, a justice of the peace and high sheriff of the county, and elder in Bethel church, died March 12, 1832.

A political convention met in Staunton, July 15, 1832, which was regarded as very imposing and influential. It was largely attended, by young men especially, from every part of the state. Charles James Faulkner, of Berkeley county, presided. The members called themselves "National Republicans." Resolutions offered by Lyttelton Waddell, of Augusta, recommending Mr. Clay for the presidency, were adopted.

The venerable Judge Stuart died in 1832.

Let us now endeavor to take a view of Staunton, and to some extent of the county, in 1833, or we may say from 1823 to 1843, for as far as we can ascertain the condition of things during that period remained substantially unchanged.

Whatever the people of Staunton may think at this time, in 1833, the town was very shabby and unattractive, in respect to its streets and buildings, public and private. Very few of the sidewalks were paved, and pedestrians floundered in the mire at almost every step. The sidewalks of some of the streets had been railed off, to protect people on foot from vehicles and cattle; but most of the rails had fallen off, so that only a remnant remained, and here and there a post. The town authorities discouraged the planting of trees, and therefore the aspect of the town was bare and bleak. The court-house stood in the yard still used for that purpose. It was an unsightly stone structure, about square, and two stories high. The entrances were on the north and south sides. The lower story was occupied exclusively as a courtroom. The ceiling and upper floor were supported by wooden columns which were ornamented with iron clamps, in which the hands of criminals were confined, in order to be branded as rogues, etc. The upper story of the court-house was divided into jury rooms.

The county court clerk's office was a long one-story brick building near the southwest corner of the lot, and south of the court-house. On the north side of the lot, adjoining the alley and Augusta street, was a brick house of two stories,

where the clerk's offices of the chancery and circuit courts were accommodated. This house was entered through a two-storied porch on its south side, fronting the court-house.

The county jail occupied the site of the present prison and was as plain and unsightly as the court-house. The town market-house was a large shed, with roof but no side walls, on the corner of the jail lot next Augusta street. In the rear of the market-house stood the whipping post and pillory.

Augusta street terminated a short distance south of the creek. The top of "Gospel Hill" was the eastern terminus of Beverley street; and the main Winchester road entered town over that hill, Coalter street being an extension of the road.

The people of Staunton obtained water for drinking and cooking from a half dozen public wells; and the labor of carrying water to distant points, no doubt retarded the growth of the town. There were few houses on the hills.

There were three churches. The old parish church had disappeared, and a fine new Episcopal church had taken its place. The other churches were the Methodist and Presbyterian; and all three were without ornamentation.

A new house was seldom built, and an old one as seldom repaired.

The taverns were the Bell, the Eagle, the Wayne and the Washington. The widow Mitchell kept a country inn half a mile from town, on the Winchester road.

The Wayne tavern is always associated in the writer's mind with Indians. Before the removal of the southern Indians west of the Mississippi, Staunton was on the direct route from their country to Washington, and Cherokees, Chickasaws and Choctaws frequently passed

through town on their way to visit the "Great Father." [For an Indian story located at Staunton, see note to Campbell's Gertrude of Wyoming.]

Another familiar sight in Staunton, in 1833, was the "Knoxville teams." At that time the merchants of east Tennessee transported their goods from Baltimore in wagons, and every spring and fall many lumbering wains passed through town, traversing the country, going and coming. The horses were generally decorated with bells. After the extension of the James River canal to Lynchburg, Knoxville teams were seen in Staunton no more. The United States mails for southwestern Virginia and east Tennessee were brought through Staunton in stage coaches. The mail bags were changed here from one set of coaches to another,

and many of the bags daily thrown off at our post-office were labelled "Abingdon," where there was a distributing office. The Staunton boys of that era had an idea that Abingdon was a place of immense importance.

About the year 1833, there was a great tide of emigration from eastern Virginia and North Carolina to Ohio. Forlorn looking people, with horses and carts to correspond, and a train of flax-headed children, frequently came along, and when asked where they were going, never failed to reply: "To the Ohio." But while the east was thus peopling the west, Ohio, and especially Kentucky, sent annually to the eastern markets immense droves of hogs. Every fall, drove after drove came through Staunton, till it seemed there must be a surfeit of swine's flesh east of the Blue Ridge. At the same

announced Bockett), long the proprietor of the Winchester line, had retired from business in 1833. He was succeeded by Belden, Porter, Boyd, Farish, Ficklin, Harman, Trotter and others. But at last the railroads drove the stage coaches from the field.

The Fourth of July was often celebrated with great zest, especially when Gen. Porterfield could be induced to come up to town and take part. At other times the people had to put up with Smith Thompson, the Scotch barber and only surviving soldier of the revolution in Staunton, who was helped into a carriage and drawn about the streets. An old negro man named Tom Evans, who had been a body servant of Maj. Willis, of Orange, at Yorktown, dressed up once in a while in a suit of continental uniform which he had carefully preserved, to the great delight of the small boys. Old Gabriel, too, who was at Yorktown, as well as at Braddock's defeat, was generally on hand to tell of his exploits.

The District Court of the United States sat in Staunton twice a year, and brought many strangers to town every May and October. Sometimes there were exciting trials of mail robbers and forgers of United States coin. The judges remembered by the writer were, Caldwell of Wheeling, Pennybacker of Harrisonburg, and Brockenbrough of Lexington. James Points, of Staunton was the United States marshal.

For many years there were only two militia regiments in the county—the 32d and the 93d. The former mustered annually at Hanger's, and the latter at the Cross Keys, a tavern not far from Greenville. A third regiment—the 160th—was afterward formed and then the 32d mustered at Waynesborough, the 93d at Middlebrook, and the 160th at Spring Hill. The officers of the various regiments met in Staunton during the month of May, and were drilled for three days preceding the regimental musters by Maj. George Eskridge, the brigade inspector.

The old town was, of course, a good deal enlivened by the celebrations, stage coaches, courts, musters, etc., which we have mentioned. During the dreary winter months of 1831-3, it was kept awake by Gen. Baldwin's law classes. This school was attended by some sprightly youths who sometimes gave employment to the solitary police officer of the town. Dr. Waddell instructed the classes in medical jurisprudence.

Although Staunton was apparently so unpros-



CYCLOPEAN TOWERS, AUGUSTA COUNTY, VA.

time, little carts drawn by little horses brought over sweet potatoes from Nelson county and oysters from Fredericksburg.

Staunton was also a great thoroughfare for travelers going to and returning from the Virginia springs. During the "Springs season" the town was alive with stage coaches, besides the private carriages in which many wealthy people traveled. Some of the latter and all of the former were drawn by four horses, and occasionally there was quite a display of liveried servants. The western line of coaches extended from Staunton to Guyandotte, on the Ohio river, and afforded the only mode of public conveyance for travelers from nearly all parts of Virginia and portions of other states, to the Mississippi valley. Bawcett (pro-

perous about the year 1833, many branches of industry were prosecuted here then, which have greatly declined, or are entirely unknown at the present day. The labor and cost of transportation required the manufacture at home of many articles now obtained from the great factories abroad. It was so, no doubt, in most inland towns. But in 1833 Samson Eagon and Henry Stofer, in Staunton, and James B. Trimble, at his place, called "Bustleburg," supplied the countryside with wagons; David Gilkeson manufactured cabinet furniture and sold it all around; Jacob and Peter Kurtz were the great manufacturers of chairs, spinning wheels, etc.; Staunton supported three hatters' shops; Pitman made earthen crocks and other articles of that kind; and Williams had a rope-walk in Newtown, where he spun all sorts of cordage. Armistead Mosby, John Kennedy and Absalom Brooks supplied, not only the home demand, but a portion of eastern Virginia, with saddlery, leather and tinware, making frequent trips to the south of James river, in wagons, to sell or barter the products of their shops.

In 1835 the old court-house of Augusta, and other buildings in the yard, were taken down, and the present court-house and clerk's offices were erected. The present jail was not built till some years afterward.

In the same year occurred a famous contest for a seat in congress, between Samuel McD. Moore, of Rockbridge, and Robert Craig, of Roanoke. The polls were kept open in Augusta for three days, and the county gave Moore a large majority, but Craig was elected.

When the presidential election of 1836 approached, Gen. Harrison, instead of Mr. Clay, became the whig candidate for the presidency. In September of that year, Gen. Harrison was in Staunton, on his way to visit his early home below Richmond. He was invited to partake of a public dinner here, but declined. Many of his political friends dined with him, however, at the Washington tavern. At the election, the vote of Augusta stood, for Harrison, 801; VanBuren, 302; Hugh L. White, 20. There were only six voting places in the county—Staunton, Waynesborough, Middlebrook, Mount Solon, Mount Sidney and the Pastures.

Robert Craig was re-elected to congress in 1837, and at the same time Alexander H. H. Stuart and William Kinney were elected to represent Augusta in the house of delegates. David W. Patteson represented the county in the state senate.

In March, 1838, the Valley Turnpike Company was chartered, to construct a macadamized road from Staunton to Winchester. The capital stock was three hundred thousand dollars, of which the state subscribed three-fifths. The remainder was promptly subscribed by the people immediately interested, and the work was vigorously prosecuted. Early in the same year the Staunton and Parkersburg turnpike was located, and the road was made, in course of time, at state expense. These great improvements gave a considerable impetus to Staunton.

During the night of October 4, 1838, an extensive conflagration occurred in Staunton. The Wayne tavern, then unoccupied, five other houses, three shops and six stables were consumed. The tavern stable had been rented and supplied with forage for the horses belonging to the members of the Presbyterian Synod of Virginia, then meeting in Staunton, and seventeen of these horses perished in the flames.

On November 1, 1838, the hundredth anniversary of the organization of the county, was celebrated. The Staunton Light Infantry, Capt. Harper, and Capt. S. D. Coiner's troop of cavalry paraded in town, and salutes were fired morning and evening from the old field pieces. There was

also a dinner at the Washington tavern, Mr. Peyton presiding.

The subject of supplying the town of Staunton with water, by means of iron pipes leading from a spring in the country, was introduced in the town council as early as 1833, but nothing was accomplished till 1839. The legislature in that year, passed an act for supplying the Western Lunatic Asylum with water, and the town united with the asylum in bringing water from Paris' Spring. The county contributed one thousand dollars to the cost. The quantity of water furnished, however, proving inadequate to supply both town and asylum, the former in 1848, piped the "Buttermilk Spring." Dwellings soon sprang up on the hills surrounding the town. The contract for the present extensive city water works was awarded July 27, 1875.

In July, 1839, Cyrus H. McCormick gave the first exhibition of his reaper, in the county, on the farm of Joseph Smith. The machine was advertised to cut one and a half to two acres an hour, and required two men and two horses to work it. The price was \$50.

The institution for the deaf and dumb and the blind was opened in Staunton, the latter part of 1839, in rented quarters. The corner stone of the building erected by the state, was laid, with much ceremony, July 9, 1840. James McDowell, of Lexington, a member of the board of visitors, delivered an oration, and there was a dinner at the Eagle tavern.

During the summer and fall of 1840, politics were the absorbing topic throughout the country. The supporters of Gen. Harrison, the whig candidate, organized "Tippecanoe Clubs," built log cabins, and drank hard cider, to help on the cause. The people of Augusta were thoroughly aroused, a large majority of them supporting Harrison; but a "Spartan band" of the "unterrified democracy" in the county was equally zealous. A two days' meeting was held in Staunton, August 24 and 25, Ex-Gov. Barbour, John S. Pendleton and S. McD. Moore were the speakers on the whig side; and William Smith, afterwards governor, Thomas J. Randolph and John Letcher represented the democracy.

Early in October, a great mass meeting was held in Richmond, on which occasion Daniel Webster delivered several speeches. The whigs of Augusta attended the meeting in large numbers. On September court-day, the "Augusta Banner" was displayed at the court-house in Staunton. Gen. Baldwin made a speech, and delivered the "Banner" to John Wise, who was with Harrison under Wayne, at the Maumee, to bear it in the procession at Richmond. Gen. Porterfield was in town and at the court-house, and the people escorted him to his lodgings.

The "Staunton Spectator" of October 1, announced that one hundred and fifty Augusta farmers had recently crossed Rockfish Gap, in their wagons, on their way to the Richmond meeting. John Wise was, however, stolen from them at Richmond, and made to carry the "Maumee battle flag."

At the election Augusta county cast 1206 votes for Harrison, and 461 for Van Buren.

In the spring of 1841, Alexander H. H. Stuart, of Augusta, was elected to the United States House of Representatives, over his competitor, James McDowell of Rockbridge. The preliminary canvass was noted for the ability and dignity with which it was conducted by the candidates. It is a little remarkable that only two citizens of Augusta—Jacob Swoope and Alexander H. H. Stuart—have ever sat in congress, and they only for one term each, notwithstanding many eminent men have resided here from the earliest period in the history of the county.

At the session of the legislature of 1841-2, Gen.

B. G. Baldwin, of Staunton, was elected by the legislature a judge of the supreme court of appeals. Mr. Peyton was at that time the state senator from Augusta.

Staunton was from an early day the seat of a high school for the education of females, under a succession of teachers. In 1831 the widow and daughters of Daniel Sheffey opened a boarding school for girls, at their residence, called Kalorama, and conducted it prosperously for many years. In 1842 the Presbyterians of the county founded the Augusta Female Seminary. Soon afterward, the Episcopalians founded the Virginia Female Institute, and the Methodists the Wesleyan Female Institute. Lastly, the Staunton Female Seminary was founded under the auspices of the Lutherans.

The political canvass of 1844 was conducted in Augusta, as well as elsewhere, with nearly as much ardor as was displayed in 1840. The whigs were active in their efforts to secure the election of Henry Clay, but failed of success.

A second newspaper was established in Staunton, in 1845, as the organ of the democrats of the county. It was first called the "Augusta Democrat," but the name was subsequently changed to "Staunton Vindicator."

When the war between the United States and Mexico arose, in 1846, the State of Virginia furnished a regiment of volunteers, to which Augusta county contributed a company. The commissioned officers of the company were Kenton Harper, captain, and Robert H. Kinney, Vincent E. Geiger and William H. Harman, lieutenants. The Virginia regiment was employed on the northern frontier of Mexico, and, the war having shifted to other parts of the country, never encountered the enemy in battle. The Augusta company returned home in August, 1848.

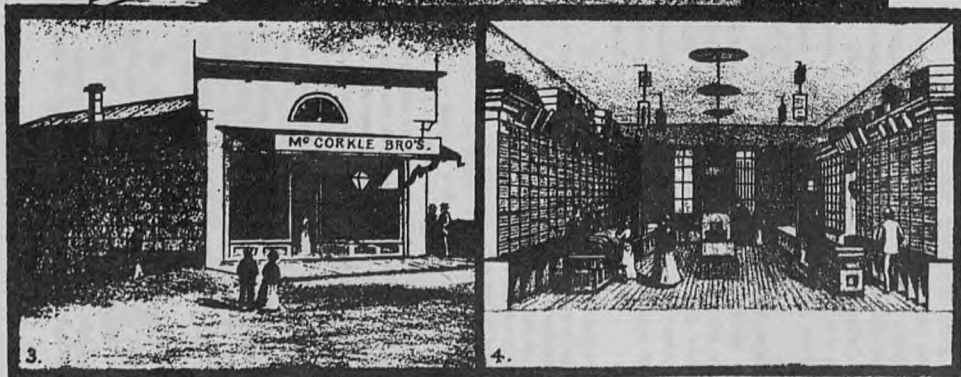
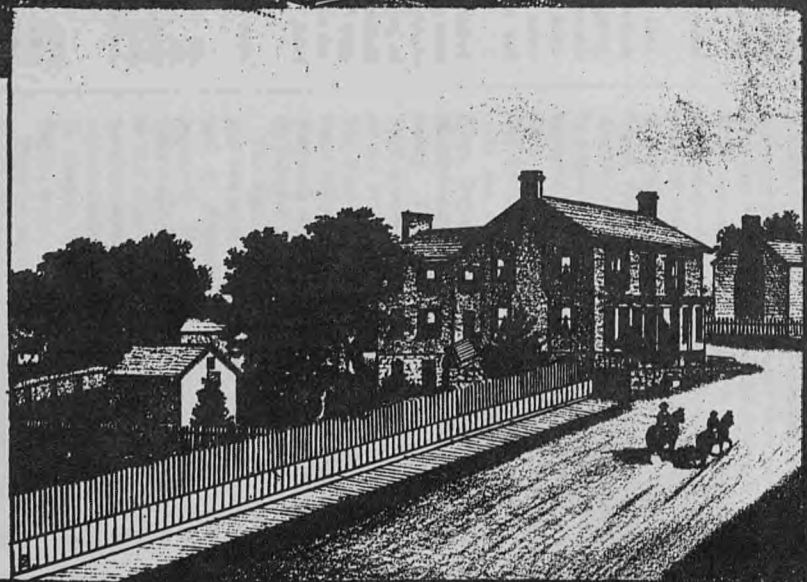
In the meanwhile the subject of internal improvements occupied much attention in the county. A meeting of the people was held in October, 1846, and resolutions were adopted in favor of the extension westward of the Louisa railroad, then completed to Gordonsville. A convention of delegates from several counties met in Staunton on the 30th of the same month, and passed resolutions of similar purport. Another more imposing convention was held in Staunton in October, 1848, which took action in favor of tunneling the Blue Ridge, and extending the railroad to Covington. We cannot follow the history of this railroad, afterwards called the Virginia Central, and now the Chesapeake and Ohio. The road was completed to Staunton and opened for travel in 1854.

On March 9, 1848, an act of the legislature was passed, authorizing the extension of the "Howardsville and Rockfish turnpike," from Martin's Mill, in Nelson, to Greenville, in Augusta, the state to pay two-fifths of the cost, not exceeding fourteen thousand dollars. The turnpike was subsequently extended from Greenville to the Staunton and Middlebrook road, about a mile from the latter place.

The "Junction Valley Turnpike Company" was chartered March 17, 1849, to make a macadamized road from Buchanan to Staunton, through Lexington, with a capital of sixty thousand dollars, of which the state subscribed three-fifths. This road was graded and planked, but not macadamized.

The "Middlebrook and Brownsburg Company" was chartered March 17, 1851, to make a turnpike from Staunton to Lexington, by way of Middlebrook and Brownsburg. The capital stock was thirty-seven thousand five hundred dollars, of which the state subscribed three-fifths. The road was made as contemplated.

The first bank opened here was established in 1848. It was a branch of the "Bank of the Valley in Virginia," at Winchester, and was known as the "Valley Bank," at Staunton. The Central Bank



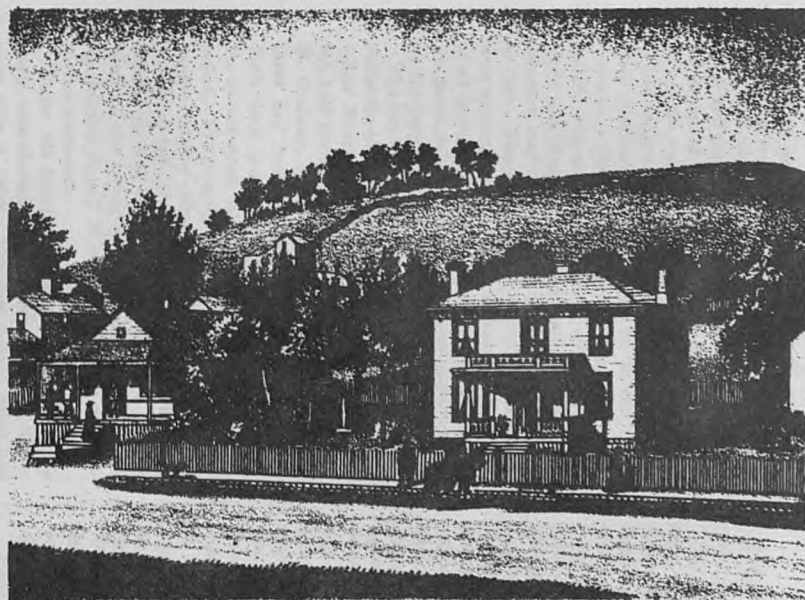
PROPERTY OF JOHN S. M^C CORKLE,
MIDDLEBROOK, VA.

N^o 1 "FARM GREENWAY."

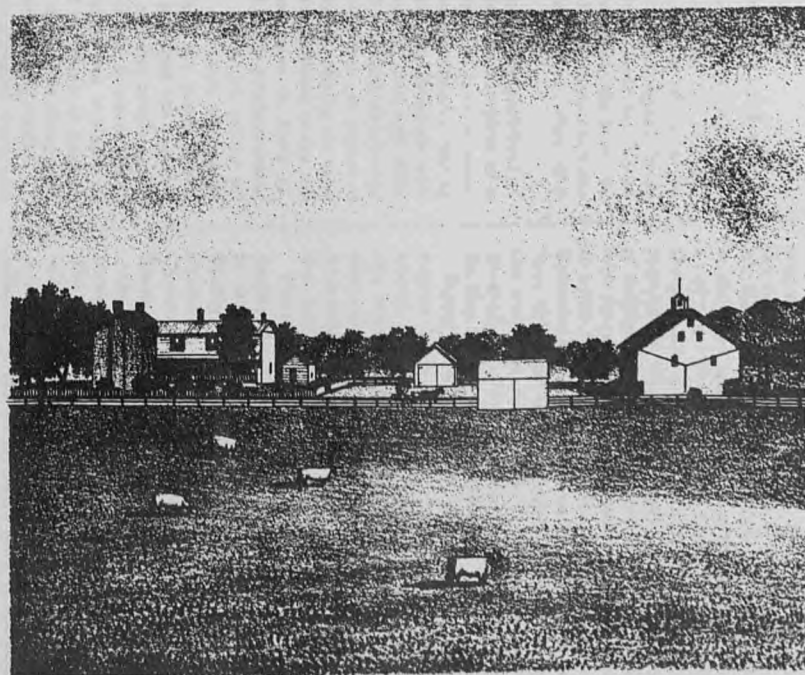
N^o 2 RESIDENCE.

N^o 3 STORE.

N^o 4 INTERIOR OF STORE.



RESIDENCE OF JOHN H. SILLING, PARNASSUS, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF SAMUEL CARRELL, MIDDLE RIVER DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.

of Virginia, an independent institution, was established here in 1853. The funds of these institutions were unavoidably converted into Confederate currency and securities during the war of 1861-5, and the capital of both was found to be worthless at the end of the war.

The subject of calling a convention to revise the state constitution was agitated for several years previous to 1850. In that year the convention was called; the members from Augusta were David Fultz and Hugh W. Sheffey, and the new constitution was ratified by the people at the polls in 1851. The changes in our system of government were numerous and radical. Suffrage was extended to all white male citizens; and judges, justices of the peace and all county officers were made elective by the people.

The last session of the county court of Augusta under the old system was held July 26, 1852. Lyttelton Waddell was the last of the high sheriffs, but held the office for only a few months. George M. Cochran, Sr., would have succeeded him, if there had been no change in the constitution. Both these gentlemen had served as members of the county court for many years without compensation. The people, however, retained most of the former county officers. Judge Thompson was elected judge of the circuit court, Nicholas C. Kinney clerk of that court, and Jefferson Kinney clerk of the county court. Moses H. McCue was elected sheriff, and William H. Harman commonwealth's attorney.

Under the constitution of 1850, justices of the peace were elected for a term of four years, beginning July 1, 1852. The first county court was held by the new justices on the fourth Monday in July of that year. Col. James Crawford was elected president of the court. His successor was Nathaniel Massie, and other presiding justices were, in the order named: Robert Guy, J. Marshall McCue, and Robert G. Bickle.

The last county court held by justices of the peace sat April 1, 1870, and the last orders of the court were attested by William J. Nelson, president *pro tem*. At the next term the bench was occupied by John N. Hendren, elected judge of the County Court of Augusta by the legislature, under the constitution of 1869.

Alexander H. H. Stuart, of Staunton, was called to the cabinet of President Fillmore in 1850.

After the adoption of the constitution of 1851, Staunton was usually selected as the place in which to hold state conventions of the democratic party, to nominate candidates for governor, lieutenant-governor and attorney-general. Here Joseph Johnson and Henry A. Wise were successively nominated for the office of governor, by large and tumultuous assemblies.

The John Brown raid at Harper's Ferry occurred in the fall of 1859. Many military companies were assembled at that place by order of Governor Wise, among them the West Augusta Guard of Staunton, Capt. W. S. H. Baylor. This fanatical affair was like "the letting out of waters," comparatively trifling in itself, but tending to the desperate strife which arose in less than two years thereafter.

VOTE OF AUGUSTA COUNTY IN PRESIDENTIAL ELECTIONS.

1844. For Clay.....	1,398.	For Polk.....	665.
1848. " Taylor	1,341.	" Cass.....	720.
1852. " Scott.....	1,674.	" Pierce.....	1,388.
1856. " Fillmore	1,904.	" Buchanan ..	1,499.
1860. " Bell, 2,553; for Douglas, 1,094; for Breckenridge, 218.			
1868. (Southern states not allowed to vote.)			
1872. For Greeley	1,943.	For Grant.....	1,008.
1876. " Tilden	4,137.	" Hayes.....	1,317.
1880. { " Hancock(D) 3,377.		" Garfield.....	1,401.
" (Re-ad) 474.			
1884. " Cleveland..	4,103.	" Blaine.....	2,971.

CHAPTER VII.

AUGUSTA COUNTY DURING THE LATE WAR.

IT is not expected that we should give here a history of the recent war, from 1861 to 1865; but a brief account of the state of affairs in the county during that period will be attempted. Much has been written and published about the battles of the war, and the life of soldiers in the field; we propose to relate succinctly how the people at home fared—what they saw and heard, what they thought and how they felt.

Until the war actually arose, the sentiment of the people of Augusta, with the exception of a few individuals, was earnestly in favor of maintaining the Union. A state convention having been called by the legislature, delegates were elected on Monday, February 4, 1861, and Alexander H. H. Stuart, John B. Baldwin and George Baylor were chosen, as Union men, to represent this county. The convention met during the same month, and its proceedings culminated in the passage of an ordinance of secession on April 17. The result was precipitated by the proclamation of President Lincoln, issued April 15, calling for volunteers from Virginia. Staunton was named in the proclamation as one of the places of rendezvous. This act of the president was regarded as the beginning of war, and our people almost unanimously took sides with the Southern States. Which side—North or South—was to blame, we shall not discuss here; but the people of Augusta, and indeed of the whole state, have always felt that they were not responsible for the conflict.

Much military enthusiasm prevailed throughout the state after the "John Brown raid," and many volunteer companies were organized in this county. When the war began we had about a dozen, one artillery, two cavalry, and the remainder infantry. All the infantry companies were armed, and the artillery had four pieces of cannon. The West Augusta Guard, of Staunton, the oldest of the organizations, was completely equipped.

April 17, 1861, was a day of intense excitement in Staunton. People from the country poured into town, and all business and labor were suspended. An order had been received by telegraph from Richmond—irregularly issued, it was afterwards ascertained—requiring the various military companies of the county to prepare to march. Late in the afternoon of the 17th, the West Augusta Guard, Capt. James H. Waters, and the Staunton Artillery, Capt. John D. Imboden, went eastward by a special railroad train; and it soon afterwards appeared that their destination was Harper's Ferry, by way of the Alexandria and Manassas Gap Railroad.

On the 19th the companies from Springhill (Capt. Doyle), Greenville (Capt. Newton), and Middlebrook (Capt. Williams), marched down the valley. Capt. Patrick's troop of cavalry, and Capt. Antrim's company of infantry also marched on the 19th, without passing through Staunton. The West View company (Capt. Roberts), the Mt. Solon company (Capt. Grinnan), and Capt. A. W. Harman's company, organized at Staunton, speedily followed the others down the valley.

The eight infantry companies from the county and two more from the lower valley, were organized at Harper's Ferry as the 5th Virginia regiment. This regiment became a part of the "Stonewall Brigade," and served during the war, at the close of which very few of the original members survived. The first field officers of the regiment were Kenton Harper, colonel; William H. Harman, lieutenant-colonel; and Wm. S. H. Baylor, major.

Staunton soon became an important military station, and a great depot for army supplies. M. G. Harman was the first quartermaster of the

post, with the rank of major. He, on going to the field, was succeeded for a short time by A. W. Harman. Finally, H. M. Bell was appointed to the office, and held it during the last two and a half years of the war. The first commissary of the post was Capt. F. H. Henderson, who was succeeded by Capt. E. W. Bayly. Wm. M. Tate, of Augusta, afterwards commissioned commissary with the rank of major, was stationed at Staunton as agent for the purchase of army subsistence. Extensive hospitals for sick and wounded soldiers were also organized and maintained here during the war. The first surgeon in charge was Dr. J. Alexander Waddell, and afterwards, successively, Dr. Hay and Dr. A. M. Fautleroy.

During the latter part of April, sixty-nine wagons laded with guns from the Lexington arsenal, arrived in town. Day after day, troops also arrived and departed. On May 18, seven companies, under command of Col. John Echols, were temporarily quartered here. The ladies were then busily at work making soldiers' garments.

The ordinance of secession was voted on by the people, May 23, and ten votes against it were cast in the county. At the same time Hugh W. Sheffey, William M. Tate and James Walker were elected to the House of Delegates. Bolivar Christian represented the county in the State Senate.

On June 4, news of the encounter with the enemy at Philippa, Barbour county, was received. The Churchville cavalry, Capt. Sterrett, was there, which increased the anxiety felt in the community. A considerable body of Virginia troops was soon collected in the northwestern part of the state, beyond the Alleghany mountain, and most of the supplies were forwarded from Staunton. For this purpose, in addition to government wagons and teams, many others belonging to farmers were temporarily pressed into service.

Capt. R. D. Lilly's company, organized at Staunton, and four other companies from different counties, started to the northwest on June 7. Regiment after regiment and company after company arrived and departed in like manner.

The militia of the county were called out on the 28th of June. On the 15th and 16th of July we had tidings of the disaster in the northwest, and of the death of Gen. Garnett.

From a diary kept by the writer at Staunton during the war, we shall now make sundry extracts, as more likely to interest the reader than any other statement of facts. A contemporary account, written on the spot, will, perhaps, to some extent, enable readers to view things as they were seen by the writer. We quote:

Saturday, July 20, 1861.—We have had a horrid view of war since my last. On Thursday evening two wagons full of sick soldiers arrived from Monterey, Highland county. Before these could be provided for others were brought in. The sick men were taken out of the wagons and placed in the Sheriff's office and court-house, many of them on the floors. The sight was a sickening one—one man gasping with asthma, another suffering from fever, and another shaking with chills. There are now at least one hundred and fifty sick soldiers in town. The citizens are doing what they can for them. * * * The Arkansas regiment left for the northwest yesterday. Two other regiments left this morning, and a fourth will go to-day. The men of one of the companies sang as they moved off: "We'll stand the storm," etc. * * * George M. Cochran, Jr., arrived from Winchester yesterday evening, and says Gen. Johnston has gone across the Blue Ridge to reinforce Beauregard at Manassas. * * * *Evening.*—The sick soldiers have been coming in all day in crowds, and are lying about in every place, suffering for food, etc. * * *

On the 19th we heard by telegraph of some fighting in Fairfax county, which was the beginning of the "First Battle of Manassas."

Monday, July 22.—The telegraph reported yesterday that the fight near Manassas Junction had been renewed,

and this morning there is intelligence of a great battle, lasting from 8 a. m. till 6 p. m. The victory is attributed to our side. The enemy were said to be retreating, pursued by our cavalry. Total loss (on both sides, it is presumed), 10,000 to 12,000. Most of the volunteers from this county were on the field, and we know that at least a part of Gen. Johnson's command was in the engagement. The utmost desire, not without apprehension, is felt to obtain full particulars.

At night the telegraph announced that one member of the Staunton Artillery and two of the Guards (Wm. H. Woodward and Joab Seely) had been killed, and that seven men in both companies were wounded.

The Augusta Militia were discharged on the 7th of August, the quota of volunteers called for having been made up. The 52d Virginia regiment was organized at that time. The field and staff officers were, John B. Baldwin, colonel; M. G. Harman, lieutenant-colonel; John D. Ross, major; Dr. Livingston Waddell, surgeon; George M. Cochran, Jr., quartermaster; and Bolivar Christian, commissary.

On August 20 the price of salt had gone up to \$10 a sack, and on the 24th the price of coffee was forty cents a pound.

Monday, September 11.—The 52d regiment marched out today toward Monterey. Main street, which they traversed, was lined with people. Seven of the companies are from this county—Skinner's, Long's, McCune's, Lambert's, Hottle's, John D. Lilly's, and Dabney's; three companies are from Rockbridge—Miller's, Morrison's and Watkins'.

On September 17 there were 750 patients in the Staunton hospital, and notice had been received to prepare for 500 more from Greenbrier River.

Thursday, November 7.—Yesterday was election day for president of the Confederate States, members of congress, etc. There was no opposition to Jefferson Davis for the presidency. The refugees from the Wheeling district, who voted here for congressman, under the governor's proclamation, seemed more interested and excited than any other persons. At the court-house they gave Russell three votes and Kidwell two.

November 11.—Salt is now held here at \$18 a sack. Baldwin is elected to congress in this district. Have not heard the result in the Wheeling district.

December 11.—Several trains of empty wagons have gone out to bring away the army stores which have accumulated at various points in Highland county since last spring. War is a costly business. Five teams from the lower part of Rockingham cost more than \$250, eleven days' hire, probably more than the lading was worth.

On Saturday morning, December 14, news was received of a battle on the Alleghany mountain. Empty wagons continued to be sent out to bring from the mountains supplies sent there at vast labor and expense. Droves of broken down army horses were also brought in, and better ones sent out as fast as they could be procured.

December 26.—Money was never so plentiful. Confederate States treasury notes, state treasury notes, bank notes of all sorts and sizes, and "shinplasters" issued by corporations and anybody who chooses. Gold and silver coin are never seen.

Thursday, March 13, 1862.—Intelligence came last night that the enemy have occupied Winchester, Gen. Jackson having withdrawn his army.

Sunday night, March 16.—Jackson's army, when last heard from, was at Woodstock. A portion of the rolling stock of the Manassas Gap railroad arrived yesterday over the turnpike.

The militia of the county having been called out again, to reinforce Gen. Jackson, they assembled in Staunton, and on March 17 proceeded down the valley. The ranks of the companies were very thin, nearly all the able-bodied men of the county being in the army already. The diary states that "when Co. A, 160th regt., was ordered into line, — marched out, solitary and alone. He was afterwards joined by several others."

March 23.—One of the Augusta militia who was discharged and sent home, gives the following account of things: "The army seemed to be in a high state of en-

joyment, but glad to receive the reinforcements from this county. The volunteers—the men composing the army—were dressed in every conceivable style. Some wore slouched hats, some caps of their own manufacture and others the old-fashioned high-crowned beavers. They were, however, uniformly dirty. Many wagons were employed in bringing the army stores from Mount Jackson to New Market. The loads were emptied in great haste and the teams hurried back for more, as the enemy were approaching. The people of the country round were flying with what property they could carry off, some having their chickens tied on the wagons. But the men, old and young, were coming to the army with their guns. The hurry and tumult were kept up nearly all night. The next day (21st), the Augusta militia were marched down near Mount Jackson, meeting our army coming this way, and quartered on the Meem farm. The cavalry were between them and the enemy, who had advanced to Woodstock, and a battle was considered certain. The next morning (22d), our army was suddenly put in rapid motion toward Woodstock in pursuit of the retreating enemy.

On March 29, the price of sugar in Staunton was thirty-three and one-third cents a pound. Salt could not be bought at any price. Supplies were again going out to our military force on the Alleghany mountain.

News of the battle of Kernstown, near Winchester, was received on the 25th, and for several days afterward there were various conflicting reports from that quarter. About April 1, Gen. Edward Johnson's force at the Alleghany mountain was withdrawn to the Shenandoah mountain. Under date of April 3, the diary says (the writer having recently been in Highland) that the withdrawal of the army "has caused a great panic in Highland, Bath and Pendleton counties. Many of the people were flying to get away from the Yankees. It was really painful to witness the anxiety of the women. * * * Recruits and returned furloughed soldiers are going down (to Jackson) from here every day in large numbers."

On Thursday night, April 17, the report came that Jackson was attacked that morning by thirty-five thousand men and one hundred cannon, and was in full retreat toward Staunton. At that time there were in Staunton clothing for ten thousand or twelve thousand soldiers, ammunition, cannon and other arms, besides the ordinary quartermaster and commissary stores. On the 19th, it being understood that Gen. Jackson had ordered the evacuation of Staunton, the convalescing patients at the hospital and a portion of the military stores were sent by railroad to Charlottesville. The money, etc., of the Staunton banks, the records of the courts, etc., were also sent to Charlottesville. At the same time, Gen. Johnson's command, in his absence, fell back from the Shenandoah mountain to the village of Westview, in Augusta. It turned out, however, that Jackson had given no orders for these movements, and a degree of confidence was speedily restored. But by the 24th, some of the enemy had appeared on North mountain, at Buffalo Gap and also at Jennings' Gap. On the 28th the enemy occupied Harrisonburg, "and helped themselves to whatever they wanted." There were conflicting reports as to the movements of Jackson and Ewell, but it was evident that they had withdrawn from about Harrisonburg toward the Blue Ridge.

On Saturday, May 3, the news came that Jackson was crossing the Blue Ridge at Brown's Gap, leaving Ewell at Swift Run Gap, and the way open for the enemy from Harrisonburg to Staunton. Sunday, May 4, was a day full of rumors and excitement. Among other reports it was stated that 10,000 of the enemy were advancing upon Johnson, at Westview, seven miles west of Staunton. In the afternoon, however, several trains of railway cars arrived from the east, crowded with soldiers. Pickets were immediately posted on all the roads leading from town toward Harrisonburg, and no one was allowed to go in that direction. Gen.

Jackson and his staff arrived, on horseback, before night, and it was soon found that the army had entered the valley again, through Rockfish Gap. Train after train arrived on Monday, and a part of the command came on foot. Jackson's old brigade (known as "Stonewall") encamped two miles east of town. In the evening the town was full of country people, who were permitted to come in, but not to go out. On Tuesday the 6th, we had news that the Federal army at Harrisonburg, had started down the valley, in a hurry, the day before; we also learned that Johnson's command had moved westward, but where to we did not know.

Wednesday night, May 7.—Jackson's army started today, all the First Brigade (except the 5th regiment), and the artillery, passing through town, and marching towards Buffalo Gap. We are entirely at a loss to know the destination of the command; but presume it will soon turn and move down the valley. The force which has passed through since Sunday, numbers at least 10,000; and this is exclusive of Johnson's brigade, which is from 4,000 to 5,000 strong.

A portion of Ashby's cavalry, about 800, passed through town in the afternoon, and camped on the Buffalo Gap road.

Thursday night, May 8.—Gen. Johnson surprised the Federal scouts—some two hundred cavalry—on yesterday, at Ryan's, in the Pastures, killing from six to ten (variously reported) and capturing two. They left their tents behind them. * * * Cannonading was heard today from early morning till four o'clock, p. m., in the direction of the Shenandoah mountain. * * * J. D. Imboden has arrived with authority to raise companies for guerilla service in western Virginia.

On Friday morning, May 9, tidings came of the battle of McDowell, in Highland county. A number of the wounded in the battle were brought in on the 10th, and also the corpses of eight or ten of the slain. "These poor fellows were from Georgia, and their comrades are sending the remains home."

Friday night, May 16.—Part of Jackson's army is at Stribling's Springs. Some of the cavalry is in town.

The command moved down the valley on Tuesday morning, the 20th.

Tuesday morning, May 27.—Yesterday morning we had news that Jackson had routed the enemy under Banks and chased them beyond Winchester, taking 2,000 prisoners and capturing all their military stores.

Wednesday, May 28.—A number of Staunton people have gone to Winchester to buy goods, having heard that the town was well supplied with many articles very scarce here. An order has come for all the wagons in the county and adjoining counties, to go down to remove the captured stores.

Some four thousand prisoners, captured in the lower valley, were taken to Charlottesville, without passing through Staunton. On the 29th there were about thirteen hundred sick and wounded soldiers in the military hospitals here.

Wednesday, June 4.—It seems to be true that Jackson has retired far up toward Harrisonburg, before a large force of the enemy. * * * A large number of wagons, sent down the valley to bring up the captured stores, returned today, many of them empty. The enemy pressed too closely for us to bring off all the supplies. Upward of 3,000 federal prisoners were at Mt. Crawford today waiting till a bridge could be built across North river.

Friday, June 6.—Jackson's army is at Port Republic. The enemy, under Fremont, are said to be near Harrisonburg, variously estimated from 17,000 to 40,000. Shields is on the east side of the Shenandoah with from 10,000 to 18,000 men.

On the 7th we heard "the sad news that Ashby had been killed near Harrisonburg."

On Sunday evening, the 8th, we had the first tidings of the battle of Port Republic. A body of demoralized Confederate cavalry dashed into town, proclaiming that our army was defeated. They were put under arrest by Maj. A. W. Harman, acting commandant of the post. Further news of the battle was received on the 9th. Many soldiers of the two regiments from Augusta were wounded, and one (Doom) was killed.

A letter from a Michigan girl to her brother, a soldier in the Federal army, picked up down the valley, begged the latter to beware of poisoned springs!

Four regiments left Staunton Sunday morning, June 15, to reinforce Jackson. On the 16th, 17th and 18th many troops arrived from the east, including Whiting's, Hood's and Lawton's brigades. Instead of proceeding down the valley, however, they returned to the east. Jackson was in town on the 18th, but the community could not learn the purpose of the military movements. The Staunton Artillery was attached to Hood's brigade.

On the 26th and 27th we heard heavy cannonading, indicating a conflict near Richmond.

Friday, June 27.—The battle was renewed this morning, and at the last account (by telegraph) was raging all along the line. At least one hundred thousand men are arrayed on each side. What multitudes are now passing into eternity, and how many more are at this moment writhing in pain on the bloody ground!

The battle continued on June 28, 29 and 30, and July 1. The cannonading on the 1st was very distinctly heard at Staunton.

Tuesday, July 8.—Yesterday a poor woman who lives in town heard that her husband, a soldier in the 52d regiment, had been killed. Her wailings, which were kept up for an hour or two, were most distressing.

Thursday, July 17.—The town as quiet all this week as if no war were raging in the land. No railroad train since Monday, and no news from any quarter. Brown sugar selling in Staunton at 75 cents a pound. No coffee here for sale, but selling elsewhere at \$2 a pound.

News of the battle of Cedar Mountain was received on August 10, but as usual, reliable details were not obtained till several days afterwards. Several railroad trains with wounded soldiers arrived on the 12th and 13th, among them fifty Federal soldiers. Quite a cavalcade of Marylanders arrived in town on the 20th.

Monday, September 1.—Many rumors for several days past, but no reliable intelligence. A report last night, that a battle occurred on Friday at Manassas.

This was the bloody battle of "Second Manassas." Among the slain were William S. H. Baylor, colonel of the 5th regiment; Edward Garber, captain in the 52nd regiment; William Patrick, major of cavalry; Preston Byers and others from Augusta county.

By September 14, the Confederate army was in Maryland, and recruits were again passing through Staunton. Jackson captured Harper's Ferry, with many prisoners, etc., and the battle of Boonsboro was fought.

Thursday, September 25.—All the wounded men who can walk have been creeping up from Winchester, trying to get to their homes. Staunton is full of them. Many look very forlorn, hands and arms hurt, faces bound up, badly clad, bare-footed and dirty.

September 25.—Last night the town was overflowing with wounded soldiers from the army, and recruits going down. Nearly five hundred prisoners were brought up from Winchester on the 27th.

Thursday, October 2.—An ambulance train laden with wounded soldiers has come in from Winchester. From the number of northern vehicles in the train, captured from the enemy, one might suppose that the Federal army was passing along. * * * The number of ambulances arrived and on the road this side of Mt. Sidney, is said to be two hundred and twenty-five.

Monday, October 13.—There was a distribution of public salt to-day. Considerable crowd and pressure. One pound allowed to each individual. Several wagons went through town to day, on their way to Kanawha county for salt. News was received on the 13th of Stuart's cavalry excursion into Pennsylvania, capture of Chambersburg, etc.

Wednesday, October 22.—We have more to fear from the scarcity of subsistence and clothing than from the Federal armies. * * * Felt hats sell for \$10 to \$15. The price for making a pair of common shoes is from \$5.50 to \$6. The cannon of twenty-three dismantled artillery companies have been sent to Staunton. Up to a few days ago, 18,000 recruits for Gen. Lee's army had passed through town, since the battles in Maryland.

Tuesday, November 25.—The scene has greatly changed.

The enemy under Burnside are opposite Fredericksburg, demanding the surrender of the place. Gen. Lee is there, commanding our forces. Jackson and D. H. Hill have moved from the Valley in the same direction.

Intelligence of the battle of Fredericksburg was received on December 12th, 13th, and up to the 23d.

Friday night, December 26.—At a sale near town to day, corn went off at \$3.60 a bushel, oats \$2.05, bran \$1.05 and other things in proportion.

Sunday night, January 4, 1863.—Returning from the cemetery this morning, I walked over the hill and through the grounds where deceased soldiers are buried. The number of graves has greatly increased since I was there last. It was almost appalling to see the rows of graves recently dug, waiting with gaping mouths for the still living victims. The sight brought before me vividly the sufferings of the soldiers dying in military hospitals, far from home and kindred, and all the horrors of a time of war.

Friday night, January 30.—A general impression that the war will soon be over.

February 7.—A number of deserters from the Federal army opposite Fredericksburg have arrived here within a few days past.

February 23.—The money value of a day's rations for one hundred soldiers, formerly about \$9, is now at market prices more than \$123. Coffee \$3.50 to \$4, and sugar \$1 a pound; butter \$1.75.

By March 11, flour had gone up in Staunton to \$25 a barrel, bacon \$1 a pound, indicating "either a time of famine or an utterly ruinous depreciation of the currency."

Early in 1863, the people of Staunton relied upon "Confederate candles" for light in their dwellings at night. Candlewick was dipped in melted wax and resin, and wrapped around a stick, one end being passed through a wire loop fastened to the stick. The end of the wick burned freely when lighted, but the illumination was very feeble, and unless the candle was watched and the wick drawn through the loop and trimmed every few minutes, the whole affair was soon aflame.

March 27.—At an auction sale yesterday, common dinner plates brought \$3.75 a piece. Many persons have had their glass and chinaware broken up since the war began and there is a great demand for such articles.

April 22.—The most necessary articles of food are very difficult to procure in this community—families who heretofore lived well, are reduced to bread and water.

The first rumor of the battles of Chancellorsville came by telegraph on May 1st. On the 4th, it was reported that our army was occupying the camp of the enemy, that we had taken ten thousand prisoners, and that Gen. Jackson was wounded. Charles Calhoun was mortally wounded and Joseph N. Ryan lost a leg. Ninety-five Federal prisoners taken in Hardy were brought in on the 3d, and forty-seven more from the northwest on the 8th. On the 7th, there was a report that the enemy was approaching by the valley route.

On the morning of the 11th, a report of Gen. Jackson's death was current, and during the day the fact was officially announced by a telegraphic dispatch from the war department at Richmond, to be forwarded to Lexington. "Universal lamentation."

May 13.—The slain have been arriving ever since the battle, as well as the wounded.

May 27.—* * * About sixty women and children from northwestern Virginia arrived in town last night. They were sent off by the Federal authorities for sympathizing with the South, and were allowed to bring only necessary wearing apparel and \$100 each.

June 17.—We learn from Winchester that our army has crossed the Potomac at three points. All the Federals at Winchester, except Millroy and his body-guard, were captured. The number is given as five thousand. On the 23d, upward of sixteen hundred of the prisoners arrived, guarded by the 58th Virginia regiment. They were immediately sent on to Richmond by railroad. Nineteen hundred more prisoners were brought up to the vicinity of town on the 23d.

June 25.—A number of female northern camp followers have been brought up from Winchester and sent to Richmond to be passed beyond our lines.

June 26.—The whole number of prisoners who have arrived here this week is 4,321, including forty-five women and children.

July 4.—A number of wagons loaded with hardware, stationery, etc., purchased by our quartermasters in Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, arrived to-day. Northern merchants have been excluded for so long from the southern market, that they are away behind the times in regard to prices. For example, hand-saw files which sell here at \$3 each, they sold to our quartermaster at 25 cents, Confederate currency.

July 7.—The atmosphere seemed full of exciting rumors yesterday. Great battles at or near Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, were reported.

Wednesday, July 8.—[The following is given as a specimen of the current reports during the war.] * * * Later in the day, Towers came into my room, with a glowing face, to tell that Mr. Phillips told him that Judge Thompson told him that Stump (telegraph operator) told him that in a battle on Sunday we had a glorious victory, some forty thousand to sixty thousand of the enemy laying down their arms. George E. Price went to the telegraph office to enquire about the matter, and reported on his return that Stump said the news must have come by some other line. Next, Maj. Tate came in—David S. Young had just told him that Judge T. said, etc. Then Maj. Bell informed me that Stump denied having authorized any such report. Coming home to dinner, I encountered Mr. Michie and John B. Baldwin. Mr. M. had seen McGuffin, etc. Baldwin said he had seen Judge T., who had given him the news in full. Mr. Michie believed the report—he was determined to believe it. Stump, he said, had communicated to Judge T. confidentially what he had no liberty to divulge, and was now endeavoring to repair damages by his denials, while the Judge was relating the news in strict confidence to everybody he met.

July 11.—Wounded soldiers have come into town to-day in a constant stream; some of them in vehicles and some on horseback, but most on foot. Many of them are without shoes.

July 12.—The stream of wounded men arriving has been uninterrupted, and not a third part of those disabled has arrived yet. It is now said that comparatively few were killed.

By the 16th, Gen. Lee's army was back on this side the Potomac. On the 18th, nearly four thousand prisoners were brought in. On the 20th, a long train of ambulances loaded with wounded or sick men arrived.

July 25.—Crowds of sick and wounded soldiers have been arriving in ambulances, wagons and on foot; and many of the inhabitants of the lower valley, with all the property they could bring off.

Gen. Lee had left the valley and gone east of the Blue Ridge.

July 28.—Wounded and sick soldiers and refugees still coming in.

On the 24th of August there was a report that the enemy had appeared at Buffalo Gap. The convalescent patients in the military hospitals were armed, the citizens formed companies, and Imboden's command (said to number 1,000 men) came up from their camp. Cannon were planted on Reservoir Hill, and other preparations were made to repel the enemy. Toward 10 o'clock A. M., most persons concluded that no enemy was near. People from Buffalo Gap had heard nothing of the approaching foe till they came to town.

In September peaches were abundant, and sold at \$23 to \$25 a bushel.

Tuesday night, October 15.—I have been engaged for several days past in the great work of having a suit of clothes made. My wife bought the cloth several weeks ago at the factory near town. It is gray jeans, and cost \$10 a yard, but similar cloth sells now at \$14. Four yards of unbleached cotton cloth were furnished by my wife (where from I know not) for pockets, sleeve-lining, etc. She also produced a piece of black alpaca, which her brother had worn as a cravat, for skirt and back lining. I bought two yards of osenburg, at \$2.50 a yard, and have engaged buttons from the manufacturers in town. The Lushbaughs turn buttons out of maple wood. The suit will cost from \$130 to \$150.

The Augusta "Raid Guard," otherwise called Home Guard, were summoned to the Shenandoah mountains, November 12, as the enemy was sup-

posed to be advancing. The various companies were organized as a regiment on the 11th—John B. Baldwin, colonel; Kenton Harper, lieutenant-colonel; J. M. McCue, major; Dr. J. Alexander Waddell, surgeon; C. R. Mason, quartermaster; N. P. Catlett, commissary; and J. C. Marquiss, adjutant.

Friday, November 13.—Seven or eight companies of the Raid Guard were on parade to-day. It was encouraging to see that we had so many men left. They are mounted infantry, except a company of artillery raised in town.

The alarm of invasion proved unfounded, and the companies were dismissed for the time. The price of flour had risen to \$80 a barrel on November 16.

Saturday night, November 21.—There is a general feeling that the war will be interminable. All round the horizon there is not a glimmer of light. Yet the war does not weigh as heavily on the spirits of the people as it did for many months after it began. The recollection of the security and abundance formerly enjoyed seems like a dream. I picture to myself the scenes in our streets three years ago—piles of boxes before every store door, shelves and counters within filled and piled up with goods; merchants begging customers to buy; groceries running over with molasses, sugar, coffee, tea, cheese, fish, etc.; confectioners making the most tempting display of fruits, candies and cakes; wagons loaded with country produce calling at every house, and farmers earnestly inquiring who wished to purchase flour, corn, potatoes, beef, pork, apples. Now the stores—still so called by courtesy—will furnish you thread, buttons, pins and other light articles which have "run the blockade," cotton cloth of Southern manufacture (at \$3.75 a yard), vessels made of clay instead of glass or chinaware, and occasionally a few yards of calico or linsey; the confectioners' saloons are like "banquet halls deserted," and you will be lucky if by dint of entreaty, and as a special favor, a farmer will sell you a barrel of flour or a few bushels of corn. In consequence of this state of affairs, each family manufactures and produces its own supplies, as far as possible. People are willing to pay any price in "currency" for what they need; "money" is plentiful, but alas! it cannot be used as food or clothing.

But I discover no change in female attire; most of the ladies seem to "dress" quite as much as formerly. How this happens I do not know. Perhaps woman's ingenuity: "Gars auld claes look amais as weel's the new." But from the sensation caused by a new bonnet at church I suppose the sex do feel the pressure of the times in regard to fashions. Men dress in homespun or in broad-cloth of antique cut, without regard to style. Our ladies, however, are just as eager as formerly for the "fashions" from Philadelphia and New York. Every now and then some female comes "through the lines," and the patterns of her bonnet, cloak and dress are speedily adopted by the whole sex.

November 29.—Flour is up to \$95 a barrel. At this rate of depreciation we shall soon have no currency at all, as the money we have will buy nothing. Many persons, however, have no more of the depreciated currency than they formerly had of good money.

November 30.—It is reported that the loss of men from this county, killed and wounded, in the late fight on the Rappahannock, was one hundred and fifty.

Friday night, December 11.—Another raid reported. The home guard called out. The home guard went to the Shenandoah mountain, to meet the enemy, on the 13th. During the night of the 13th, there were wild reports from various quarters. It was said that Imboden had been skirmishing with the enemy at the Shenandoah mountain, and that Echols had been driven back from Lewisburg. On the 15th, several railroad trains filled with soldiers, under Gen. Early, arrived from the east, and went through to Buffalo Gap, and Gen. Fitz Lee's cavalry was in the vicinity of town.

December 17.—When I awoke this morning, it was raining hard, and the trees were covered with ice. I wondered how it was possible for human beings to endure long-continued exposure to such weather. * * * At ten o'clock, Lee's division of cavalry passed through town, and went up the Greenville road. None of them knew where they were going. The men were dripping wet, but seemed in fine spirits. The horses generally are in good condition. The home guard returned today, having been dismissed to assemble again at a minute's warning.

December 18.—All the troops returned from Buffalo Gap last night, in the rain. They were marched two miles from town on the Greenville road, and spent the

night without shelter. * * * During the morning, we learned that part of the troops were to go to Millborough to intercept Averill. At one o'clock, Thomas's brigade, was marched to the depot, to meet a railroad train, which however, did not arrive till after dark. * * * As soon as the men found they would not start immediately, they had blazing fires in the open space between the American hotel and the depot. * * * The crowds of dusky, clay-soiled and smoke-begrimmed men gathered in the dark around the fires, cooking their rations as best they could, was a picturesque scene.

On Saturday the 19th, there was a rumor that a Federal force was coming up the valley, and was near Harrisonburg. After ten o'clock that night, a cannon was fired on one of the hills in town, to summon the home guard of the county. In a short time the regular troops arrived from their camp, and were marched out towards Harrisonburg. "The soldiers seemed to be in high spirits, calling for the home guard, and cracking jokes at one another as they passed along."

The home guard started Sunday evening, the 20th, and being mounted they overtook and outstripped the regular infantry. The Federal force at Harrisonburg, hearing of the approach of the Confederates, hurriedly retreated, and there was a lively race to New Market. From that point the guard returned home, Gen. Early with his troops moving down in the direction of Woodstock.

The portion of the diary from early in January till June 5, 1864, was lost—most probably destroyed, having been in a house burnt by a party of Federal soldiers. The writer recalls no local event of special interest, during that time. In the month of May, the battles of the Wilderness, or Spotsylvania C. H., between Gens. Grant and Lee, occurred. Col. James H. Skinner, commanding the 52d regiment, was severely wounded and permanently disabled, on the 12th, at Spotsylvania C. H. On the 15th of the same month, Gen. Breckenridge defeated a considerable Federal force at New Market, many Augusta people participating in the battle.

No resident of Staunton then living and over the age of infancy, will ever forget Sunday, June 5, 1864. For a week or more, we had heard that a Federal force under Gen. Hunter was coming up the valley, and that Gens. Crook and Averill were pressing in from the west with another large force. Imboden, with two skeleton regiments and a company of artillery, was in the valley, while McCausland and Jackson, each with a small force, were between Staunton and Crook and Averill. The reserves (men over forty-five and boys under seventeen years of age) were also with Imboden; and during the previous week all the men in the county able to bear arms—detailed workmen, farmers, etc.—were hastily collected and formed into companies, and joined him at North river, near Mount Crawford. On Thursday and Friday, troops arrived from the southwest under Gen. William E. Jones, probably twenty-five hundred men. Gen. Jones joined the force at North river on Saturday morning, and assumed command. The enemy finding our men strongly posted and entrenched, moved toward Port Republic and crossed North river to the Augusta side. During Saturday night, our army fell back to a point between New Hope and Mount Meridian, near the village of Piedmont. Skirmishing began early on Sunday morning.

From eight or nine o'clock in the morning till three in the afternoon, many citizens of Staunton were on the hills observing the smoke arising from the battlefield. For several hours, no one of them imagined that a battle was in progress only eleven or twelve miles off; but the smoke was supposed to arise from the conflagration of mills and barns by the enemy. We had often heard the reports of cannon from below Richmond, but the noise of the battle of Piedmont did not reach our ears till

quite late in the day, when a few explosions of cannon were indistinctly heard.

In the meanwhile, diligent preparations for departure in case of disaster were going on at the various government depots and offices. Railroad trains and wagons were loaded up, and all hands connected with the quartermaster's and commissary departments were ready to start at a moment's warning. Information of the battle was received by mid-day; but our people were generally hopeful, especially as persons recently observing on the hill-tops reported that the smoke was receding, showing, as they thought, that our men were driving the enemy back. Late in the afternoon, however, the writer learned the result of the battle by the excited remark of a citizen: "Gen. Jones is killed, and our army is routed!" Such was the intelligence from the field.

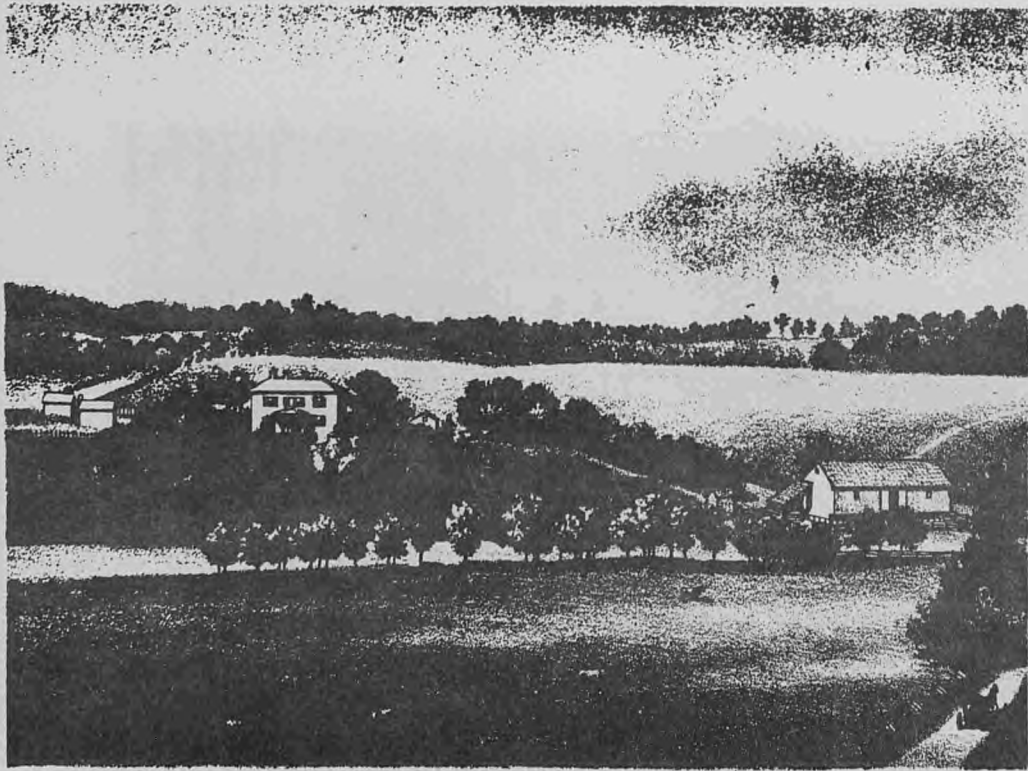
The army wagon trains and many citizens immediately left town, going up the Greenville road and crossing the Blue Ridge, into Nelson county, at Tye River Gap.

It is not proposed to give here an account of the battle. The Augusta men, hasty levies as they were, are said to have acquitted themselves with marked gallantry. One wing of the enemy was repulsed, but the other overwhelmed the Confederate force opposed to it, and the men not killed or captured came pell-mell into Staunton Sunday night. The county had to mourn the loss of several esteemed citizens, and many more were seriously wounded. Robert L. Doyle, acting as captain, Harvey Bear and John W. Meredith were killed on the field. The more experienced soldiers said the raw troops did not know when they were whipped, and kept on fighting when they should have retreated. But nearly every man of them was to some extent a trained soldier. Brig. Gen. Vaughan succeeded to the command of the defeated army, and drew off to the Blue Ridge, at Rockfish Gap.

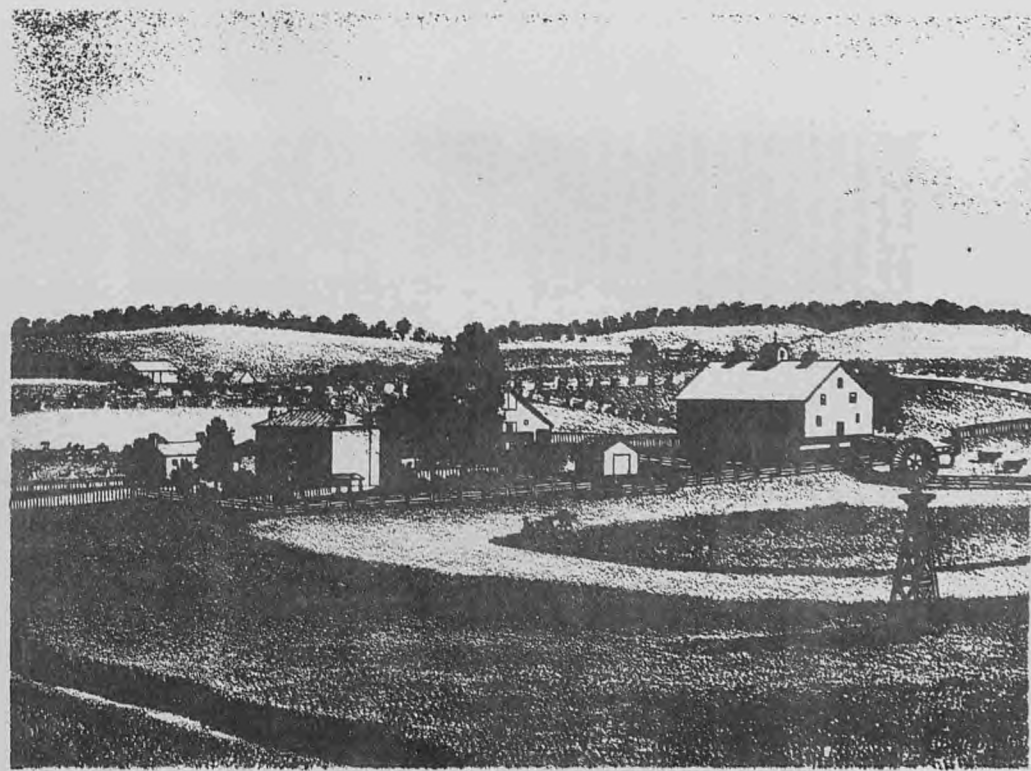
Sunday night passed away at Staunton without incident. On Monday, June 6, the Federal troops entered the town. Very few men were left in town, but many Confederate soldiers, absent from their commands, lingered till the last moment. One daring youth, when exhorted to make his escape, declared his purpose to remain till he could capture a horse! And he actually accomplished his purpose. Almost in the presence of a large body of Federal cavalry, he singled out a man in advance, and presenting his gun ordered him to dismount. Leaping into the saddle, he made his way with horse and prisoner to Waynesborough, where he joined his command.

From a letter written at Staunton, by a lady, on the 6th and several subsequent days, we make the following extracts. After describing the alarm in her family on the entrance of the Federal troops, the writer says: "We got through the remainder of the day and the night without much alarm and without being much annoyed, except by so many Yankees coming to the hydrant for water and to the kitchen for food. * * * Tuesday morning early, the burning commenced—railroad depot, steam mills, government workshops, Trotter's shops and staves, woolen factory, Garber's mills, etc. * * * He (Gen. Hunter) agreed that the workshops should not be burnt, if the citizens would bind themselves to pull them down, which they did; but still the fire was applied, without notice having been given. All the interior of the shoe factory was destroyed. It must have been ludicrous to see Mrs. — flying across the street, axe in hand, to assist in the work of destruction, and thus escape the danger of fire.

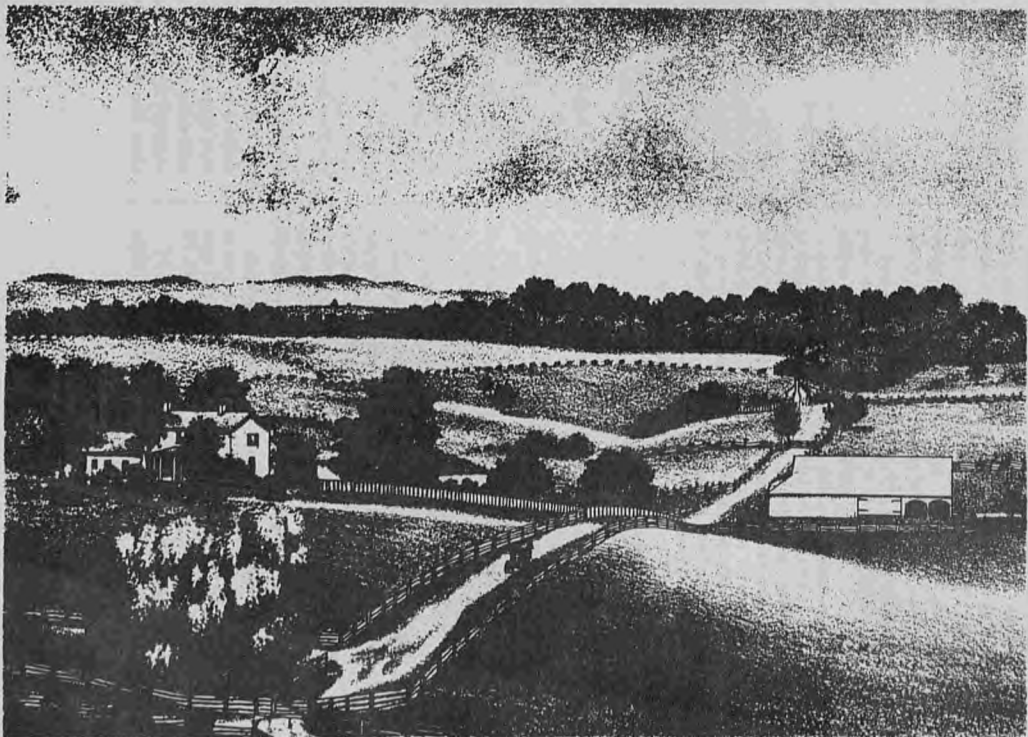
"After the houses were consumed the Yankees began to pack up for a move, and we could hear them saying to one another, 'bad news!' but could not quite learn what, until it leaked out that there was a report of the capture of their wagon train.



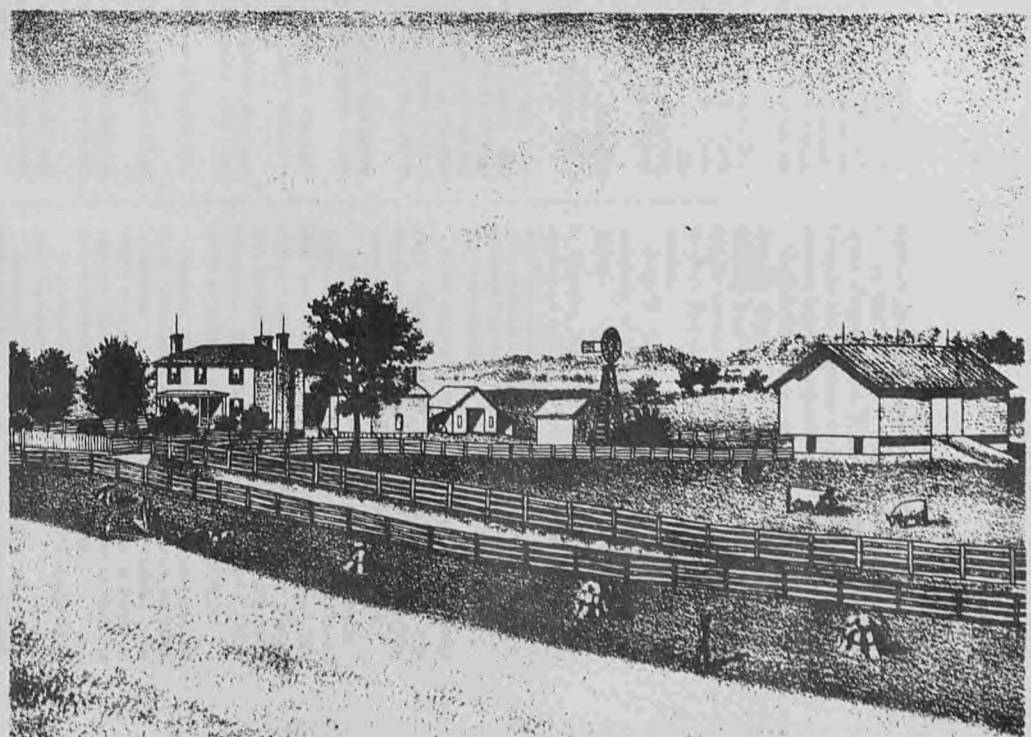
RESIDENCE OF T.S. HOGSHEAD, NORTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF C.B. COINER, SOUTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



"OAK SPRINGS" RESIDENCE OF MAJ. W. M. TATE, BEVERLEY MANOR DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF JOHN T. SMITH, SOUTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.

Before they began to pack up, some of the houses were searched for provisions, but a stop was put to it, and by dinner time not a Yankee was seen in town. Our scouts were on the hills in a little time, and we felt too happy to think whether the enemy would return. * * * By four o'clock the town was perfectly alive with blue coats again. I learned from some of the men that they had gone to reinforce Averill. On Wednesday Crook and Averill came, and it seemed to me that the locusts of Egypt could not have been more numerous. Our yard and kitchen were overrun all the while, and the streets were filled from end to end. * * * The house-searching began in good earnest on Wednesday. The officer who searched the lady's house "was very gentlemanly, and went through it as a matter of form," without taking any of her limited supplies.

"N. K. Trout" (mayor of the town) "and B. F. Points were arrested, and kept in confinement till this morning, or last night. Mr. Trout was accused of concealing arms, and Mr. Points of showing pleasure when the Federal troops left town on Tuesday. George W. Fuller was arrested as a spy, and held for some time, because he returned to town bringing letters from Confederate soldiers to their families. Our people captured at Piedmont were cooped up in an old guard-house, and we all made bread for them.

"Friday.—Most of the Yankees left this morning. Since dinner a regiment has passed, just arrived from Martinsburg. I understand most of the troops took the Lexington road. * * * Our servants were such a comfort to me. They could not have behaved better, and I really feel thankful to them."

Many of the Federal soldiers who were in Staunton seemed to be gentlemanly persons, having no heart for their business; others were mere plunderers, and robbed blacks and whites alike. At night the town was perfectly quiet, and the citizens felt safe. During the day, however, the soldiers were permitted to roam about, and there was a reign of terror. Federal soldiers, dressed in Confederate uniform, called "Jesse Scouts," traversed the county, and strong parties of cavalry visited nearly every house. They boasted that some of their men were in Staunton Sunday evening while the stampede was going on, and even on the previous Friday.

Gen. Breckenridge came from the east to Rockfish Gap with reinforcements, and for several days there were frequent skirmishes about Waynesborough and on the road to Staunton. On the 12th the writer counted twelve dead horses, on the road between Staunton and Waynesborough. The railroad as far as Fishersville was torn up, and the bridges were burnt. Another person, who came down the Middlebrook road a few days afterwards, reported many graves of Federal soldiers killed in skirmishes with Jenkins' cavalry, and puddles of blood here and there. The Donaghe, Opie and Taylor farms, adjacent to Staunton, were almost denuded of fences. R. Mauzy's printing office "Staunton Spectator" was broken up.

The Federal army proceeded up the valley towards Lexington, part going by the Greenville route and the remainder by way of Middlebrook and Brownsburg. Jenkins was in advance of the latter, skirmishing as he was driven back by the superior force of the enemy. Breckenridge broke up at Rockfish Gap, and hung upon the Federal rear. Several citizens of Staunton, in charge of government supplies at a point in Nelson county, were surprised and captured by a party of Federal soldiers. The Rev. R. H. Phillips, acting as quartermaster, and William D. Candler, were taken to Ohio, and spent many weary months in a military prison.

The diary was resumed, and we continue our extracts:

Thursday, June 16.—The town has been as quiet every day as on Sunday. Stores and shops closed; a few men sitting about on the streets and talking over the events of the last two weeks; and even the little children are less noisy than usual. Everything looks like a tornado had swept over the country and left the stillness of death in its track. Many farmers, having lost their horses, are unable to work their corn.

Sunday night, June 19.—Reported this morning that Hunter got near enough to Lynchburg to throw two shells into the city, one of which killed a boy; that Early attacked him yesterday evening, and defeated him; that the Confederates advanced this morning, but found the Federal army retreating in confusion; and that Breckenridge was in a position to intercept the retreat.

Sunday night, June 26.—Gen. Early, commanding Ewell's corps, has arrived within a few miles of town, from towards Lexington, and the soldiers from this county have been permitted to visit their homes.

Tuesday evening, June 28.—Early's army has been passing through town since daylight, off and on. The infantry have gone down the valley turnpike, the artillery down the New Hope road, and the cavalry around the western part of the county, without coming through town. * * * The soldiers, generally, seemed in good spirits. * * * Early is supposed to have from 20,000 to 25,000 men.

Wednesday night, July 13.—We have no intelligence from Early, except through northern newspapers. Great excitement in the North.

Friday, July 15. * * * The government offers \$30 a bushel for wheat! Surely the public debt will never be paid.

Monday night, July 18.—Our army has left Maryland and crossed to the south side of the Potomac, near Leesburg.

Tuesday, August 2.—Early is said to be at Bunker Hill, near Winchester.

August 3.—A rumor to-day that 40,000 Federal troops were at Harper's Ferry.

August 4.—Northern newspapers report that McCausland has been to Chambersburg, Pa., and burnt the town.

Henry K. Cochran, of Staunton, was killed there.

Saturday, August 13.—Heavy cannonading was heard all morning, from six to eleven or twelve o'clock.

August 14.—A large number of army wagons came in today, probably 140 to 150 in all.

Tuesday, September 20.—Our army defeated yesterday below Winchester. * * * A deep feeling of gloom seems to pervade the community. Life has no charms at present, and there is little to hope for in the future. It is like walking through the valley of the shadow of death.

Friday evening, September 23.—A report got out about two o'clock that Early had been driven from Fisher's Hill. * * *

September 24.—A despatch from Gen. Early this morning assured the people of Staunton they were in no danger.

About ten o'clock at night, September 24, Gen. Early sent an order to evacuate the town, as he was compelled to retire from the valley to Brown's Gap, in the Blue Ridge. During that night there was little rest or sleep to persons connected with the various government depots; and as early as possible the next day all army stores were started eastward by railroad and wagon trains.

The Federal army, some three thousand men, under Gen. Torbet, entered Staunton on Monday evening, September 26, and, passing through, camped on the Waynesborough road. A part of them went to Waynesborough on Tuesday, during which day the remainder of them occupied Staunton. They entered very few houses, and committed no depredations of any consequence. They impressed all the negro men into their service, and took them down the railroad to destroy the track and bridges. The colored people were very indignant, and did much less damage to the railroad than they could have done.

On Wednesday, the 28th, the whole Federal command moved to Waynesborough, and late that evening they were attacked by a party of Confederate cavalry from Brown's Gap. The enemy were driven off, leaving about forty dead and more than eighty prisoners. They returned through Staunton late Wednesday night, in great haste and some

disorder, and went down the valley, as they came up, by the Springhill road. They appeared to spend Thursday and Thursday night in burning barns in the direction of Middle river, the whole heavens being illuminated until a late hour.

Confederate cavalry entered Staunton on Thursday, the 29th. Gen. Early afterwards moved his infantry from Waynesborough towards Mt. Sidney, and for several days North river, from Bridgewater to Port Republic, was the line between the two armies.

John N. Hendren, of Staunton, was appointed treasurer of the Confederate States in the fall of 1864.

Thursday night, October 20.—This afternoon it was announced that Early had attacked the enemy, near Strasburg, and captured 1,500 prisoners. Before the first glow of satisfaction at this good news had left my face, we heard that Early had lost his cannon, and was retreating before the enemy.

Other reports followed in quick succession. Many days elapsed before reliable intelligence was received. From 1,300 to 2,000 Federal prisoners were, however, brought up to the town on the 22d.

Throughout the war the courts were open, and their authority was respected. In November of this year several "detailed farmers," called into military service, sued out writs of *habeas corpus*, and brought their cases before Judge Thompson at Staunton. He decided that they were not liable to serve as soldiers, and ordered their discharge.

Thursday, November 10.—From the means employed to provision Early's army it must be in great straits for subsistence. Commissaries and Quartermasters, with details of men, are traversing the county in search of supplies. The mills are watched, and every barrel of flour is taken up as soon as it is turned out.

Thursday, November 24.—A large part of Early's army is in this county.

December 7.—Two divisions of Early's corps are on their way to Richmond, having reached Waynesborough.

Rhodes' division passed through Staunton on the 15th, and Wharton's division on the 17th. Rosser went into quarters with his cavalry, near Buffalo Gap, and the infantry and artillery left under Early, were stationed near Fishersville. Gen. Early had his head-quarters in Staunton.

Saturday night, December 31.—The last night of a dreary year, full of wretchedness. * * * Forage is very scarce, and many horses are dying.

Thursday night, January 12, 1865.—The State sells salt to citizens at a less price than the market affords, and I have secured all I am entitled to as the best investment of Confederate money. Some time ago the article was distributed to the people of the town at the rate of 25 lbs. to each person, and I then obtained 275 lbs. Another distribution was made today, and I received 220 lbs. more. * * * A lady's dress which formerly cost \$10 to \$15 now costs \$400 to \$500.

Monday night, January 16.—Rosser has been to Beverly, Randolph county, and has captured 600 or 700 Federal soldiers.

January 18.—Pins sell in town at \$12 a paper, and needles at \$10. Flour in Richmond, at \$1000 a barrel. Confederate currency is almost worthless.

Thursday, February 9.—Two soldiers, convicted of desertion and robbery, were shot today near town.

Friday, February 24.—Gen. Crook entered Staunton this afternoon under very different circumstances from his visit in June last.

He was brought in by McNeil's men, who kidnapped him in Cumberland, Md., although there were two Federal regiments in the town.

The people of Augusta, assembled at February court, contributed a large amount of provisions for the maintenance of the Confederate army.

Tuesday, February 28.—We were startled this morning by an order from Gen. Early to pack up. The enemy in large force was coming up the valley, and had arrived at Mt. Jackson.

This was Sheridan's command of mounted men, which swept through the valley without tarrying

at any point. They burnt Swoope's depot and Bell's mill, near there, on March 2.

Gen. Early retired with his small force to Waynesborough, where he made a stand, but he was surrounded by a host of enemies, and his men were killed, captured or scattered. William H. Harman was killed there, while acting as volunteer aid. The General narrowly escaped capture. On Saturday, the 4th, a body of the enemy returned to Staunton with their prisoners, 600 to 800, and the same day proceeded down the valley, while the main body crossed the Blue Ridge at Rockfish Gap. Sheridan had no wagon train, but subsisted off the country, his men plundering, consuming and destroying as they went. While they were in Staunton they seized cooked food wherever they found it, and on the 2d the writer's family had nothing to eat during the day except some potatoes which a servant smuggled into the house and roasted in the dining-room. For several weeks afterwards there was no communication by railroad or telegraph between Staunton and Richmond.

Early Monday morning, April 3, the news of the evacuation of Richmond flew through the streets of Staunton, and from house to house.

April 6.—All things indicate that the days of the Confederate States are numbered.

On Tuesday morning, April 11, vague reports of Gen. Lee's surrender reached Staunton.

Friday, April 14.—We heard last night from an authentic source that Gen. Lee had certainly surrendered himself with his army. * * * O'Ferrall is still operating in the lower valley. The Federal commander in that quarter notified him that he was violating the terms of Lee's surrender, and O'F. has sent to Staunton for information. * * * Pierpont, the Governor of Virginia, recognized by the Federal government, has been in Richmond. He was elected by a few votes in Alexandria, Norfolk, and possibly some other places occupied by Federal troops during the war. Another state, called West Virginia, is presided over by Governor Bowman, or Boreman.

April 19.—No rumors today of any consequence. Yesterday there was a report that Lincoln had been assassinated.

April 20.—The report of Lincoln's assassination was renewed this evening. * * * There is general regret in our community. * * * We are now in a condition of anarchy. Bands of soldiers are roaming about, and taking off all cattle, sheep, horses, etc., they suppose to be public property.

Having borne the heat and burden of the war for so long, it is not strange that returned soldiers, having come home in a state of destitution, should feel that they had a peculiar right to Confederate property; nor is it strange that they sometimes mistook private for public property.

April 24.—The county court was busy today, trying to devise means for maintaining law and order.

April 25.—We have no mails, no newspapers, and no regular communication with the world. Occasionally some person arrives with a Baltimore or Richmond paper. * * * Trouble, suspense, anxiety—a time when we have no government, and know not what will be on the morrow.

On the 29th several companies of the 22d New York Cav., under Col. Reid, arrived in Staunton from Winchester. Their object in coming was to restore order and parole Confederate soldiers. They retired on May 2, accompanied by many colored people of both sexes, who could not yet realize that freedom was possible in their old homes.

A public meeting of citizens was held in the court-house on Monday, May 8, and a committee appointed to go to Richmond and ascertain what could be done under the existing circumstances.

On May 9 a considerable body of Federal troops, under Brig.-Gen. Duval, arrived from Winchester, and remained in Staunton for several weeks. The conduct of the officer named was justly complained of by our people. He complained that the people

were "still defiant;" that young girls "made mouths" at Federal soldiers, etc., etc., and ordered or allowed many petty annoyances unworthy of the representative of a great government. A pistol having been fired in the street on one occasion, the General was convinced that some "rebel" had attempted to assassinate him. Several Federal officers openly ridiculed the idea, but Gen. Duval could not be pacified. During the next day no one was allowed to enter or leave the town, and every house was searched, and all firearms found were carried off. United States flags were suspended or posted at many points, and every body who was supposed to treat the national symbol with disrespect was vigorously dealt with. Finally two regiments of infantry, under a Col. Stewart, arrived on June 12, to relieve Gen. Duval, and greatly to the relief of the citizens of Staunton. Col. Stewart proved to be an intelligent gentleman, and magnanimous in his administration of affairs. We had no civil officers, and only military authority. It was understood that we were to be under the "Pierpont Constitution of Virginia," framed at Alexandria by sixteen men, it was said, and never voted upon by any one else. Several stores were soon opened in Staunton by army sutlers, but the people were too poor to purchase many of the articles temptingly displayed. When the war ended there was absolutely no "currency" in the community, and it was several weeks before any kind of money could be obtained in sufficient amount for even limited business operations.

The "Legislature of Virginia" met in Richmond the latter part of June, and passed an act prescribing who might vote at ensuing elections. The Senate was composed of four men, including the lieutenant-governor, who presided.

The first election for county officers under the new order of things was held July 19, and most of the late incumbents of the various offices were re-elected. The first session of the county court was held August 28. An election of corporation officers had also been held, and the military authorities made a formal surrender of the town to the civil authorities; but as long as Federal troops remained in Staunton the provost-marshal continued to try and determine causes brought before him, according to his arbitrary will and pleasure.

An election for members of the State legislature was held October 12. Nicholas K. Trout was elected to represent Augusta county in the Senate, and John B. Baldwin, Joseph A. Waddell and George Baylor were elected members of the House of Delegates.

The Circuit Court for Augusta county, Judge L. P. Thompson presiding, was held at the usual time in November. By that time all Federal troops had been withdrawn from the county, and civil authority was fully restored.

END OF ANNALS.

BESSIE BELL AND MARY GRAY.

BY JOS. A. WADDELL.

During the time over which we have passed in the course of our annals, one generation of men after another has flitted by "like shadows o'er the plain." "The fathers, where are they?" Old houses, too, and nearly all the ancient works of man, have been rapidly disappearing. It is only here and there that a structure associated with the early times of the county remains.

But some objects in and around Staunton have remained the same year after year, substantially

unchanged and unchangeable. These old hills, who does not love them? The pioneer settlers in Beverley's Manor saw them as we see them now, and no "native to the manor born" can ever behold or think of them without feelings of almost filial affection. The dwellers in level countries cannot appreciate many parts of the book of Psalms. When they read of "the mountains round about Jerusalem," no chord in their heart vibrates; and those other words, "I will lift up my eyes unto the hills from whence cometh my help," so pleasant to us, excite no emotion in them.

Pre-eminent among our Staunton hills stand Bessie Bell and Mary Gray. We prefer the original Scotch spelling and pronunciation of the former name. "Betsy," as people call it now, is harsh and crabbed, but "Bessie" "is soft as is Apollo's lute."

As far as we know there is nothing remarkable in the structure or products of the two hills. We presume this soil continues to produce annual crops of huckleberries and chineapins as it did in days of yore. One of the former productions of that region, however, has long since disappeared. Seventy or eighty years ago the boys and girls who went there for berries and nuts returned with an ample supply of ticks, the little insects now quite unknown in this part of the country.

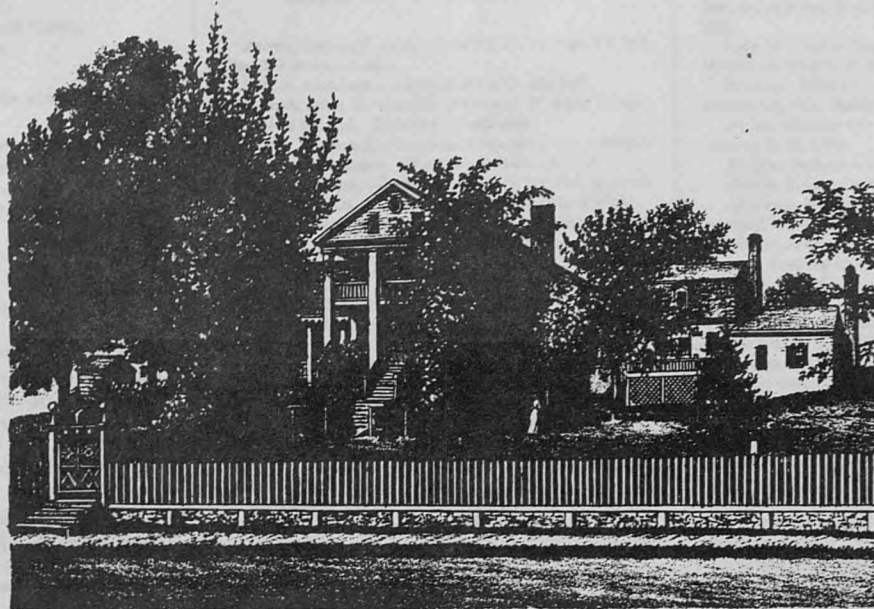
It must be confessed that Bessie Bell and Mary Gray cannot boast of the cedars of Lebanon, the dew of Hermon, or "the excellency of Carmel." Even the prospect from the higher peak does not fully compensate for the toil of climbing the rugged ascent. Bessie Bell is no Pisgah; but of her it may be said emphatically,

'Tis distance lends enchantment to the view,
And robes the mountain in its azure hue.

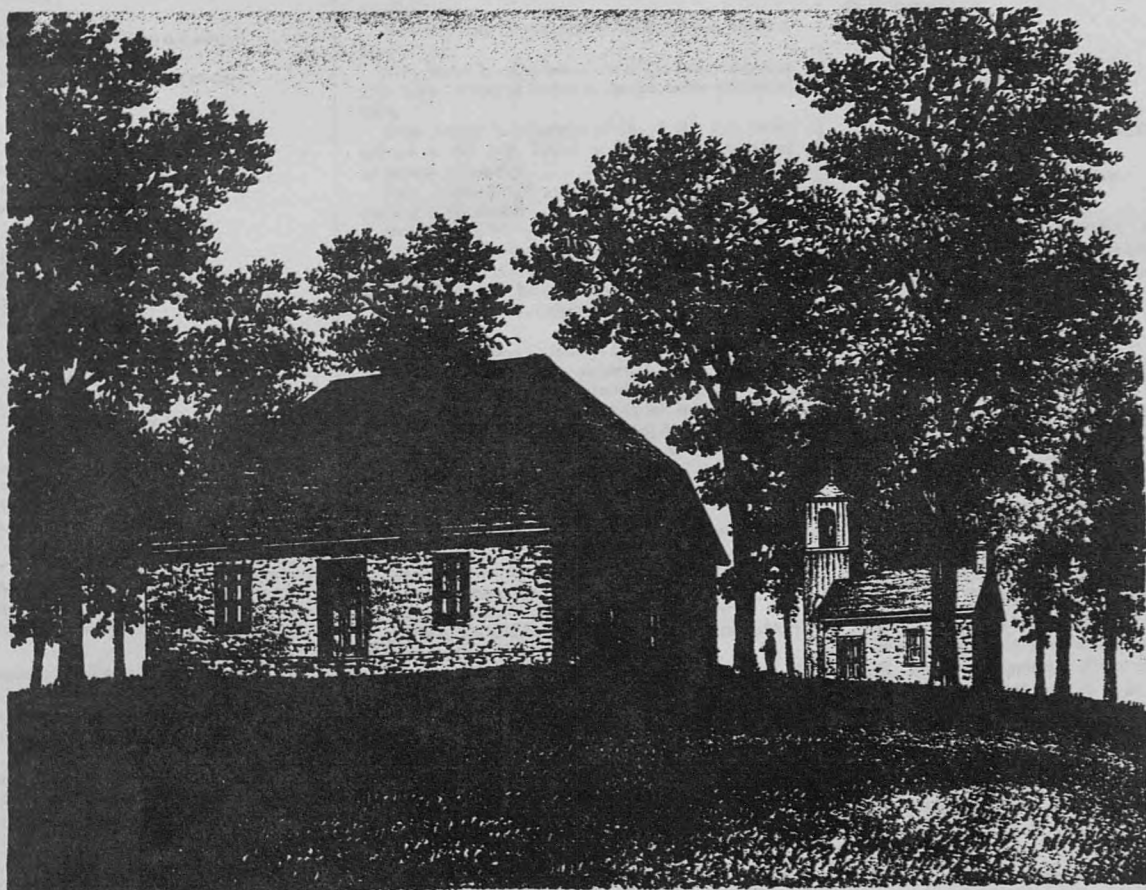
People living in Staunton, northwest of Bessie Bell, never see how beautiful she appears at sunrise; but all of them who love the picturesque must have observed and feasted upon the entrancing beauty sometimes presented after a shower of rain, by the rays of the setting sun lingering of a summer's evening upon her leafy summit. And then, when the clouds gather around her head, and "Bessie Bell puts her nightcap on," we see her in another phase scarcely less attractive. Ben Nevis and Snowden are doubtless goodly mountains, but what are they to Bessie Bell and Mary Gray! Surely no Staunton boy, coming home from his wanderings, ever fails to look out for the old familiar hills, and to hail them at first sight with feelings akin to rapture.

It was once currently reported that Bessie Bell and Mary Gray were young girls murdered near Staunton by the Indians; but there is no foundation for the story. The names are of Scottish origin. According to the tradition Mary Gray's father was laird of Lednoch, and Bessie Bell's of Kinvaid. An intimate friendship subsisted between the girls, and while Bessie was on a visit to Mary Gray, in 1845, the plague broke out in the neighborhood. To escape the pestilence they built a bower near Lednoch House, and lived there for some time. But the plague raging with great fury they caught it from a young man who was in love with both of them, and who had brought them their food. They died in their bower, and were buried near the river Almond, half a mile from the house of Lednoch, which is seven miles northwest from Perth. Their sad fate became the subject of a ballad, which commenced thus:

Bessie Bell and Mary Gray,
They were twa bonnie lasses,
They biggit a bower on yon burn brea,
And theckit it ower wi' rashes.



RESIDENCE OF HON. A. H. H. STUART,
STAUNTON, VA.



AUGUSTA CHURCH,
BUILT IN 1755

The remainder has been lost, except the concluding stanza:—

They wadna lie in Methven kirkyard,
Amang their gentle kin;
But they wad lie in Dronock Haugh,
To beik fornent the sin.

Allan Ramsey's ballad on the same subject is a modern production.

When a new proprietor took possession of Lednoch, about the year 1781, a heap of stones, almost covered with thorns and briars, was shown to him as the burial place of Bessie Bell and Mary Gray. He removed all the rubbish, made up the grave double, planted flowering shrubs around it, and enclosed the spot with a wall, in which he fixed a stone, bearing in engraved letters the names of Bessie Bell and Mary Gray.

These names were carried from Scotland to Ireland, and applied to two mountains in County Tyrone, near the town of Omagh; and by our Scotch-Irish ancestors they were brought to the Valley of Virginia.

As introductory to the following lines by a Staunton poet, we state for the information of readers not acquainted with the locality, that the Western Lunatic Asylum is at the western base of Bessie Bell, and the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb and the Blind is on a neighboring knoll, in full view:

TO BESSIE BELL.

BY REV. JAMES A. WADDELL, M.D.

Now Bessie Bell, why should you swell,
With such a *lowering* air?
Why thus look down on all the town,
And frown upon the fair?

'Tis true, you're tall, but that's not all—
You're ugly, big, and bold;
You're bald and bare, and some e'en dare
To whisper you are *old*.

Grizzly old maid, you're much decayed
(My pencil shall not flatter),
And one may guess, your style of dress
Can never mend the matter.

Your taste prefers a *cap* and *spurs*
To all the forms of fashion,
And you must own a heart of *stone*,
Insensible to passion.

But, dear Miss Bell, the Muse must tell
Your virgin boast and pride—
How minds that roam find health and home,
And welcome by your side.

Reason beguiled, like a lost child,
By Fancy's false pretenses,
Upon your lap just takes a nap,
And wakes up in her senses.

The *Deaf* and *Blind* have found you kind,
The *Dumb*, too, speak your praises;
The *weather-wise* neglect the skies
To watch your varying phases.

All, all, speak well of you, Miss Bell;
Nature her favor shows,
Washing your face with earliest grace
And spanning thee with *bows*.

Now, Bessie, sure, you'll frown no more,
Since lovers are not few;
At least you'll smile at morn a while,
When *Sol* begins to woo.

And Day grown old, with tints of gold,
Perhaps may light thy face;
And silvery Night may crown thy height
With ornaments of grace.

LIST OF AUGUSTA MEN

WHO SERVED IN THE FIELD AS CAPTAINS, MAJORS,
ETC., IN THE CONFEDERATE ARMY.

Antrim, George T.—Captain of Co. H, 5th regt. Va. Inf. Disabled at Kernstown.
 Arehart, Abraham.—Captain of Co. D, 52d Inf.
 Baldwin, John B.—Inspector-general of state troops; colonel of 52d Inf. Disabled by sickness.
 Balthis, William L.—Captain of Staunton Art., succeeding John D. Imboden. Disabled at Malvern Hill.
 Bateman, Elijah.—Captain of Co. G, 52d Inf, succeeding Samuel McCune. Lost arm in battle, May 6, 1864.
 Baylor, William S. H.—Major of 5th Inf., lieutenant-colonel and colonel. Killed at second battle of Manassas, commanding brigade.
 Berkeley, Frank B.—Chief of staff of Brig.-Gen. Imboden, with rank of captain.
 Brown, S. Bradford.—Captain of cavalry; Gen. Lee's body-guard.
 Bucher, David.—Captain-quartermaster of 5th Inf.
 Bumgardner, James, Jr.—Captain of Co. F, 52d regt., succeeding Joseph E. Cline.
 Burke, Thomas J.—Captain of Co. L, 5th Inf., succeeding James H. Waters.
 Byers, John S.—Captain of Co. C, 52d Inf., succeeding Wm. E. Dabney. Disabled by wound.
 Christian, Bolivar.—Captain-commissary of 52d Inf. Afterwards on special service with rank of lieutenant-colonel.
 Cline, Joseph E.—Captain of Co. F, 52d Inf. Retired from disability.
 Cochran, George M., Jr.—Captain-quartermaster of 52d Inf.
 Cochran, James.—Captain of Co. I, 14th Va. Cav., succeeding F. F. Sterritt. Promoted colonel.
 Coiner, C. Benton.—Captain of Co. G, 52d Inf., succeeding Elijah Bateman.
 Curtis, E. L.—Captain of Co. I, 5th Inf., succeeding O. F. Grinnan.
 Dabney, William E. (of Albemarle).—Captain of Co. C, 52d Inf. Killed at Fredericksburg, December 13, 1862.
 Davis, Robert C.—Captain of Co. A, 52d Inf., succeeding Edward Garber.
 Dempster, John J.—Captain of Co. E, 5th Inf., succeeding L. Grills.
 Dold, James A.—Captain of Co. H, 52d Inf., succeeding J. D. Lilly. Killed at Bethesda Church, below Richmond 1864.
 Doyle, Robert L.—Captain of Co. C, 5th Inf., lieutenant-colonel of 82d Inf. Killed at Piedmont while acting as captain of reserves.
 Fultz, Alexander H.—Captain of Staunton Art., succeeding A. W. Garber.
 Garber, Asher W.—Captain of Staunton Art., succeeding W. L. Balthis. Promoted major.
 Garber, Edward.—Captain of Co. A, 52d Inf., succeeding J. H. Skinner. Killed at second battle of Manassas.
 Gibson, James W.—Captain of Co. H, 5th Inf., succeeding G. T. Antrim.
 Grills, Lycurgus.—Captain of Co. E, 5th Inf., succeeding J. W. Newton. Died in service.
 Grinnan, Oswald F.—Captain of Co. I, 5th Inf.
 Hall, William.—Captain of Co. G, 5th Inf., succeeding R. Simms. Killed at Wilderness, May 5, 1864.
 Hanger, Henry H.—Captain of Co. I, 14th Cav., succeeding Jos. A. Wilson.
 Hanger, Marshall.—Captain and major on staff of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart.
 Harman, Asher W.—Captain of Co. G, 5th Inf., colonel of 12th Va. Cav.
 Harman, John A.—Major-quartermaster of 2d Corps Army of Northern Virginia.
 Harman, Lewis.—Captain of Co. I, 12th Cav.
 Harman, Michael G.—Lieutenant-colonel and colonel of 52d Inf., succeeding J. B. Baldwin.
 Harman, William H.—Lieutenant-colonel and colonel of 5th Inf., succeeding K. Harper. Killed at Waynesborough, 1865, acting as volunteer aid.
 Harper, Kenton.—Colonel of 5th Inf.
 Hotchkiss, Jed.—Major and topographical engineer of 2d Corps Army of Northern Virginia.
 Hotte, Joseph F.—Captain of Co. D, 52d Inf.
 Humphreys, John F.—Captain of Co. I, 52d Inf., succeeding Samuel Lambert.
 Imboden, George W.—Colonel of 18th Va. Cav.
 Imboden, John D.—Captain of Staunton Art., colonel of independent command; brig.-general.
 Koiner, Abesalom.—Major of 5th Inf., succeeding W. S. H. Baylor.

Lambert, Samuel.—Captain of Co. I, 52d Inf. Died in service.

Lilly, John D.—Captain of Co. H, 25th Inf. Promoted lieutenant-colonel.

Lilly, Robert D.—Captain of Co. D, 24th Inf. Promoted lieutenant-colonel and brig.-general. Lost arm at Winchester. 1864.

Long, William.—Captain of Co. B, 52d Inf. Killed at McDowell, May 8, 1862.

McClung, Thomas.—Captain of Co. E, 1st Va. Cav., succeeding Wm. Patrick.

McCoy, Charles D.—Captain of Co. D, 25th Inf., succeeding R. D. Lilly.

McCune, Samuel.—Captain of Co. G, 52d Inf.

Merritt, C. G.—Captain-quartermaster of 25th Inf.

McKamy, William C.—Captain of Co. D, 5th Inf., succeeding W. H. Randolph.

Newton, James W.—Captain of Co. E, 5th Inf. Promoted major. Lost leg in service.

Patrick, William.—Captain of Co. F, 1st Va. Cav. Promoted major. Killed at Second Manassas.

Randolph, William H.—Captain of Co. D, 5th Inf., succeeding H. J. Williams. Killed at Cold Harbor.

Roberts, St. Francis.—Captain of Co. F, 5th Inf. Disabled by wounds in battle.

Simms, Richard.—Captain of Co. G, 5th Inf., succeeding A. W. Harman. Killed at Second Manassas.

Skinner, James H.—Captain of Co. A, 52d Inf., lieutenant-colonel and colonel. Wounded and disabled May 12, 1864.

Sterritt, F. F.—Captain of Co. I, 14th Cav.

Thompson, James.—Captain of Co. B, 52d Inf., succeeding Wm. Long.

Trevy, J. M.—Captain of Co. C, 5th Inf., succeeding R. L. Doyle.

Trout, E. Stribling.—Captain of Co. H, 52d Inf., succeeding J. A. Dold.

Waters, James H.—Captain of Co. L, 5th Inf. Captain-commissary of regiment.

Weller, Charles L.—Captain of Co. C, 52d Inf., succeeding J. S. Byers.

Williams, Hazel J.—Captain of Co. D, 5th Inf. Promoted lieutenant-colonel.

Wilson, Joseph A.—Captain of Co. I, 14th Cav. succeeding James Cochran. Lost arm in battle.

Wilson, Peter E.—Captain of Co. F, 5th Inf., succeeding St. F. Roberts.

CHURCHES IN AUGUSTA COUNTY.

PRESBYTERIAN.

Augusta Church.—Generally known as the "Old Stone Church." Congregation organized in 1740. Present church erected about 1755.

Tinkling Spring.—Congregation organized about 1740. The present church building is the third or fourth house of worship at the same place.

Hebron.—Originally "Brown's Meeting House." Congregation organized about 1746. Present church building erected about 1829.

Bethel.—First house of worship erected in 1772.

Mossy Creek.—Congregation organized in 1767.

Rocky Spring.—Near Deerfield. Congregation organized during the last century.

Staunton, First Church.—Congregation organized in 1804; first church built about the year 1818; present building erected in 1871.

Staunton, Second Church.—Organized in 1875. Church built in 1876.

Waynesborough.—For many years associated with Tinkling Spring. First church building erected about 1798, which was superseded by another in 1824. Organized as a separate church in 1847. Present church erected in 1874-78.

Other Presbyterian churches in the county, with the dates of their organization, are as follows: *Union*, 1817; *Shenariah*, 1832; *Mt. Carmel*, 1835; *Mt. Horeb*, 1857; and *Loch Willow*, at Churchville, 1866.

There are several chapels in the county, connected with various congregations. The total membership is about 2,300.

ASSOCIATE REFORM.

The only church of this denomination is located about two miles northwest of Midway, and is called *Providence*, or "Old Providence," to distinguish it from New Providence, in Rockbridge. The first church organization at Providence was in 1748, by the Presbyterians. About 1765 the population on Walker's Creek, Rockbridge, having increased, and the membership being chiefly in that neighborhood, the original site was abandoned. The Associate Reform Presbyterians, commonly called "Seceders," occupied the spot about the year 1769. In 1793 they began to erect a stone church, which still stands, but it has been superseded by a brick church built in 1859-60.

EPISCOPAL.

The parish church in Staunton was built on ground donated by Beverley, the patentee. It was taken down in 1831, when a new church was built. The latter gave way to another, which was superseded by the present structure.

There are two Episcopal chapels in the county, one called Boyden, some five miles southeast of Staunton, and the other called Trinity, two miles west of town.

METHODIST.

A Methodist church was built in Staunton before the close of the last century, probably about 1797. The present building is the third erected on the same spot. It is stated that the name of Staunton circuit first appears on the minutes of the Methodist Episcopal church in the year 1806. The denomination has church buildings now at Staunton, Greenville, Waynesborough, Sherando, Mt. Sidney, New Hope, Springhill, Churchville, Parnassus, Mt. Solon, Jennings' Gap, Craigsville, West Augusta, Calvert Chapel, Mt. Olivet, Pleasant Grove, and Hammond Chapel. There is also a chapel at West End, Staunton.

The value of church property is \$29,100, and of six parsonages \$11,500. Membership in 1882, 1,511.

The colored Methodists of Staunton have two churches, one of them a large and well-built structure.

BAPTIST.

A Baptist church was organized in Staunton in 1853, and their present house of worship was built in 1855. There are now six Baptist churches in the county of the same connection, with a membership of 890, besides two African Baptist churches in Staunton.

LUTHERAN.

The Lutheran churches are, Coiner's, or Trinity, on South river, built in 1780; Mt. Tabor, built about 1785; Mt. Zion, six miles west of Middlebrook, organized about 1830; Mt. Hermon, at Newport, organized in 1850; Bethlehem, near Fishersville, organized in 1845; Mt. Zion, near Waynesborough, organized about 1845; Staunton, founded in 1850; Salem, near Mt. Sidney, built in 1845; Churchville, built in 1850; Bethany, near Waynesborough; and Pleasant View, between Staunton and Springhill.

UNITED BRETHREN IN CHRIST.

The number of organized churches in the county is fifteen, with eleven houses of worship. Bishop J. J. Glossbrenner resides in the county, at Churchville.

TUNKER, OR GERMAN BAPTIST.

This denomination was first organized in the county about the year 1790. Its churches are Mt. Vernon, Barren Ridge, Valley District and Moscow, with branches at several places.

GERMAN REFORMED.

The existence of this church in the county dates back to the last century. For many years the

denomination held, jointly with the Lutherans, St. John's Church, near Middlebrook, St. Peter's, at Churchville, and Zion's, near Waynesborough. The Rev. John Brown ministered to these churches many years, till 1833. From 1835 to 1858 the Rev. J. C. Hensel officiated at St. John's. New Bethany church was founded at Newport in 1845, and another church was built, at Mint Spring, in 1882.

CATHOLIC.

The church in Staunton was built in 1850. Number of members, 700. A school connected with the church is conducted by Sisters of Charity.

POSTOFFICES IN AUGUSTA COUNTY.

Annex, Arbor Hill, Barterbrook, Buffalo Gap, Burke's Mill, Churchville, Craigs ville, Deerfield, Ferrol, Fishersville, Folly Mills, Fort Defiance, Galena, Giant Mills, Greenville, Harriston, Koiner's Store, Laurel Hill, Long Glade, Lyndhurst, Marble Valley, Middlebrook, Milnesville, Mint Spring, Moffatt's Creek, Mossy Creek, Mt. Meridian, Mt. Sidney, Mt. Solon, New Hope, Parnassus, Pond Gap, Rolla, Sangerville, Sherando, Staunton, Steele's Tavern, Stonewall, Stover's Shop, Stribling Springs, Stuart's Draft, Swoope's Depot, Waynesborough, West Augusta and Weyer's Cave.

VOTING PLACES IN AUGUSTA COUNTY.

Staunton.—First Ward at court-house, and Second Ward on Water street.

Beverley Manor.—West End, Hebron Church, Folly Mills, Bolivar and Sandy Hollow.

North River.—Springhill, Mt. Solon, Sanger-ville, Parnassus and Centreville.

Riverheads.—Greenville, Middlebrook, Midway, and Newport.

Middle River.—Red Mills, New Hope, Mt. Meridian, Mt. Sidney and Verona.

South River.—Fishersville, Waynesborough, Barterbrook and Sherando.

Pastures.—Churchville, Deerfield, Lebanon Springs, Buffalo Gap and Craigs ville.

AUGUSTA FEMALE SEMINARY, STAUNTON.

This institution was founded in the year 1841, and the trustees were incorporated by act of the Legislature of Virginia, January 30, 1845. The first principal was the Rev. Rufus W. Bailey; the present principal is Miss Mary J. Baldwin. From a small beginning the school has become, under the present management, one of the largest and most important of its class in the country. For many years the number of pupils has been about two hundred, of whom from one hundred and thirty to one hundred and forty have boarded in the establishment. The course of instruction is extensive and thorough, embracing every branch of learning and accomplishment useful to women. The seminary was founded by Presbyterians. See engraving.

STAUNTON FEMALE SEMINARY.

This school is regarded as one of the prominent educational institutions of Staunton, and was organized by the Rev. J. I. Miller, a Lutheran minister, and has since been considered a Lutheran institution. Since its organization it has rapidly increased its patronage, and is now the leading and most popular school of this denomination in the entire south. The hill upon which the Seminary building stands, overlooks the city, and while it is within a short distance from the business centre it is at the same time remote from those objectionable features which it is desirable to avoid in placing an institution of learning. The scholastic year of 1882 began under new auspices, the Rev. James Willis succeeding Mr. Miller as principal. Under

Mr. Willis' management there has been a marked increase in attendance, and the school has grown largely in the public esteem.

The course of study is most thorough, and the utmost care is taken in the selection of teachers. The school government is that of a well regulated family.

WESLEYAN FEMALE INSTITUTE.

This institution under the administration of Dr. Harris, its present principal, has obtained a prominent position. Concerning the college itself, its curriculum of studies, its management, the advantages it offers, but little need be said as its patrons are fully informed. The system that obtains is essentially the same as that of the University of Virginia. Wesleyan Female Institute is under the auspices of the Baltimore Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South.

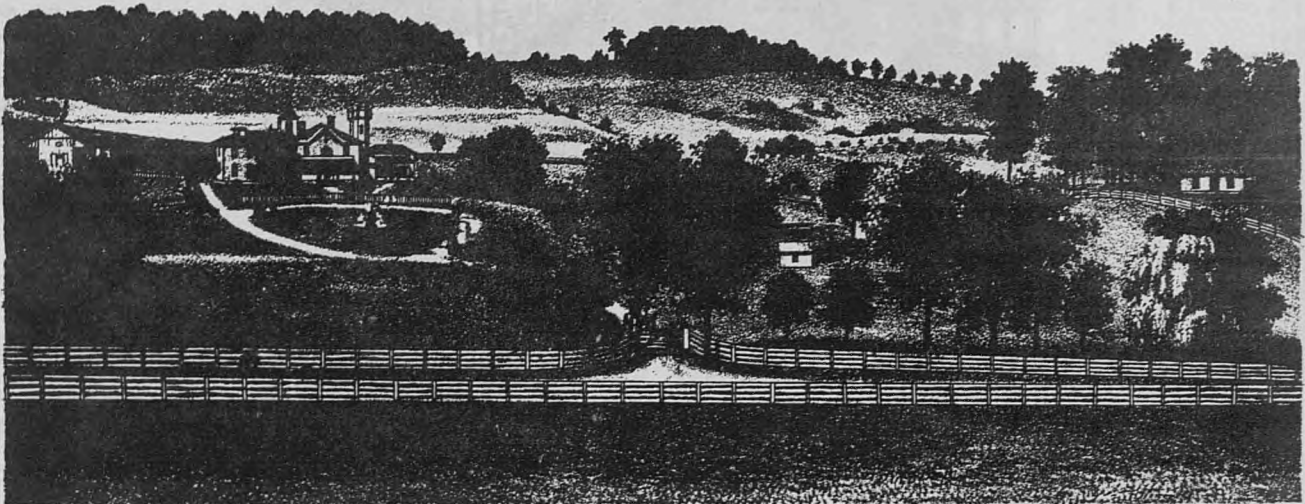
VIRGINIA FEMALE INSTITUTE.

This school has been a pioneer in female educational work and was established in 1834. It belongs to the Council of the Diocese of Virginia of the Protestant Episcopal Church. It has been under the patronage, and to a large extent the management, of that body. For more than twenty years Rev. R. H. Phillips was in charge. In 1880 Mrs. Gen. J. E. B. Stuart became principal, and under her management the Institute has taken a foremost position among the leading seminaries of the country, and is kindly looked upon by other denominations than the Episcopal. The methods of instruction do not differ materially from those in use in the leading colleges of the land. The three departments of the school—preparatory, academic and collegiate, have each a corps of teachers, selected with special reference to their fitness for the positions they are to fill. Art, music, modern languages, etc., receive special attention as well as the cultivation of those graces which society has a right to demand. The location of the school is exceedingly healthful and pleasant, and the surroundings are all that the most fastidious could desire. The main buildings present an appearance of comfort and elegance that closer inspection does not belie. The three main buildings are connected by continuous halls, affording easy access to all parts of the establishment. There is a neat chapel, a well furnished calisthenium, commodious music rooms, art studio, well ventilated recitation rooms, a cozy dining hall, besides parlors, reception rooms, etc. Of this school and its worthy preceptress, Bishop F. M. Whittle in his report to the Council in May, 1883, says, "I am satisfied that Mrs. Stuart and her accomplished and faithful associates are thoroughly worthy to be entrusted with the instruction and the mental, moral and religious training of as many of our daughters as may be committed to her care."

STAUNTON MALE ACADEMY.

WILLIAM H. KABLE, M.A., PRINCIPAL.

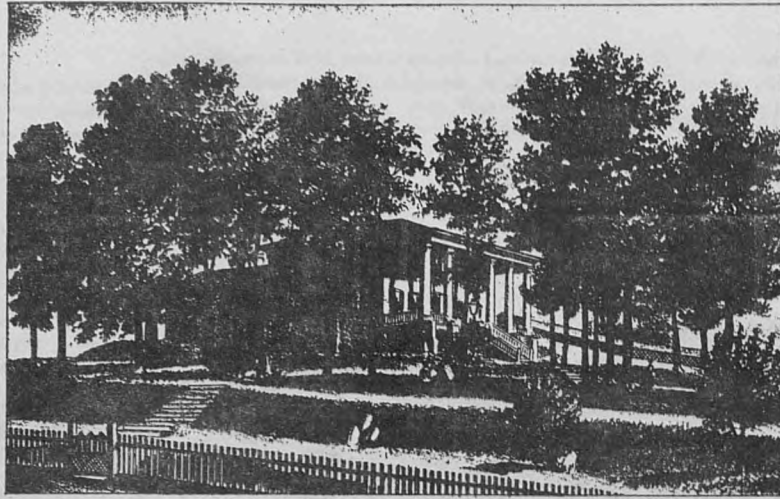
The design of the school is to offer such thorough instruction in the prominent and important branches of a liberal education as will enable the student to enter the higher classes of our universities. The success which those pupils who have attended the University of Virginia, or Washington and Lee University, or received appointments at Annapolis and West Point, have won, gives assurance of the character of this preparation. Yet recognizing the demand for a course of study for a large class of boys whose opportunities of education will and must be limited to the Academy, a course of instruction has been adopted which is intended to fully meet this demand, and which is believed to be surpassed by no other school in the state.



AUGUSTA MALE ACADEMY, FT. DEFIANCE VA.



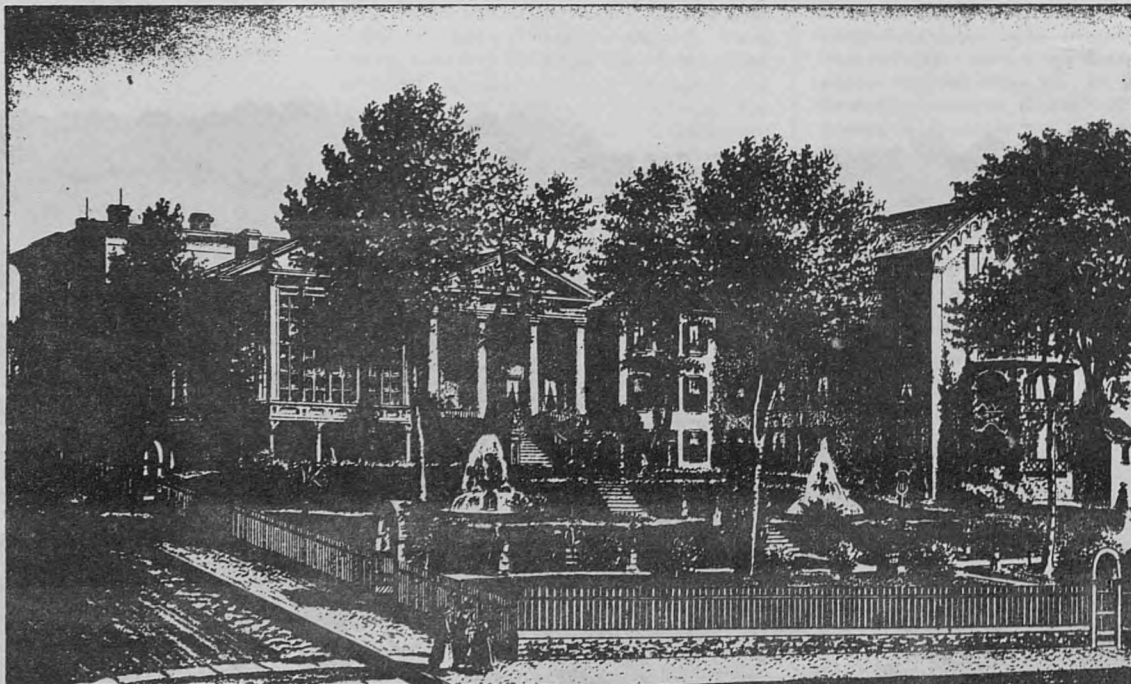
PROPERTY OF GEO. SEAWRIGHT, STONEWALL, VA.



"HILL TOP."



RECITATION ROOMS & ART GALLERY.



(FRONT VIEW)
AUGUSTA FEMALE SEMINARY,
STAUNTON, VA.

AUGUSTA MALE ACADEMY.

CHARLES H. ROLLER, FOUNDER AND PRINCIPAL.

This is an institution of high grade, designed to prepare boys for the universities or the business of life. The course of instruction embraces the English branches, ancient and modern languages, mathematics, natural sciences, penmanship and book-keeping. The location is one of the most delightful in the Valley of Virginia—nine miles from Staunton, on the Valley Turnpike; half a mile from Fort Defiance Depot, Valley railroad; within two hundred yards of the old Augusta Church, and at an elevation of thirteen hundred feet above sea level. This school is recommended by Washington and Lee University, and the University of Virginia, as one of the very best in the state. Postoffice, Fort Defiance. See engraving.

STATISTICS FROM THE UNITED STATES CENSUS OF 1880.

AGGREGATE POPULATION BY COUNTIES.

	1860.	1870.	1880.
State of Virginia	1,219,680	1,225,168	1,512,565
Augusta County	27,749	28,763	35,710

POPULATION OF MINOR CIVIL DIVISIONS, 1880.

Staunton City (Ward 1, 3,490; Ward 2, 3,174)	6,664
Beverly Manor District	5,362
Middle River District	5,549
North River District	4,513
Pastures District	3,991
Riverhead District	4,757
South River District (Waynesboro' town, 484)	5,074
Population of the county	35,710

POPULATION BY RACE.

	White.			Colored.		
	1860.	1870.	1880.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Virginia	661,773	712,989	880,656	527,763	512,841	631,615
Augusta County	21,547	22,026	28,993	9,202	9,787	9,510

NOTE.—The increase of colored population in Augusta County in 1880 is due, in part, to the influx from Eastern Virginia. The census of 1870 is regarded, however, as very inaccurate.

POPULATION BY NATIVITY.

	Native.			Foreign.		
	1860.	1870.	1880.	1860.	1870.	1880.
State of Virginia	1,201,117	1,211,409	1,497,669	18,518	18,754	14,896
Augusta County	27,147	28,378	35,205	622	387	505
Staunton	4,865	6,426	8,228	225	225	238

NATIVE AND FOREIGN POPULATION, 1880.

Augusta Co.	Native.					Foreign born.							
	Born in the State.	North Carolina.	Maryland.	Pennsylvania.	New York.	Tennessee.	British America.	England & Wales.	Ireland.	Scotland.	German Empire.	France.	Sweden & Norway.
	23,756	76	261	217	94	121	161	901	227	12	16	10	..

SCHOOL, MILITARY AND VOTING POPULATION, 1880.

State of Virginia.	Ages.			5 to 17, both inclusive.		18 to 41, both inclusive.		21 and over.	
	Total.	Male.	Female.	Male.	Female.	Male.	Female.	Male.	Female.
Co. of Augusta.	1,512,565	745,569	766,996	247,843	242,781	284,033	284,033	334,565	334,565

FARM AREAS AND FARM VALUES.

	No.	Acres.	Dollars.	Dollars.	Dollars.	Dollars.	Dollars.	Dollars.	Dollars.
State of Virginia	118,517	8,610,113	216,028,107	5,496,114	1,097,180	4,978,231	2,137,283	4,738,231	4,738,231
Augusta County	2,357	246,843	10,082,679	380,516	67,716	1,377,680	2,130	1,377,680	1,377,680

PRINCIPAL VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS — 1880.

State of Va.	14,223	1,791	7,826,174	1,600,683	397,263	2,016,766	79,886,868	1,827
Augusta Co.	3,728	1,791	727,683	50,036	30,926	33,926	33,926	1,827

LIVE STOCK, ETC.—1880.

State of Va.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.	No.
Augusta Co.	218,035	32,526	54,700	243,031	388,417	497,089	955,401	868,675	1,480,675	11,470,924	11,488,994	23,848	37,848	1,880,397	46,767	1,583,297	1,170,413	184,550

ASSESSED VALUATION AND TAXATION.

Assessed Valuation.		Taxation.	
Real Estate.	Dollars.	Dollars.	Dollars.
State of Va.	283,601,460	74,883,658	1,170,413
Augusta County	9,705,662	2,436,662	29,961
Total.	Dollars.	Dollars.	Dollars.
State of Va.	293,307,122	77,320,320	1,200,374
Augusta County	9,705,662	2,436,662	29,961

PUBLIC OFFICERS OF THE COUNTY AND CITY IN 1884.

- William McLaughlin, judge of circuit court.
- Joseph N. Ryan, clerk of circuit court.
- John W. Stout, judge of county court.
- Wm. A. Burnett, clerk of county court.
- Meade F. White, commonwealth's attorney for county.
- Alex. B. Lightner, sheriff of the county.
- James N. McFarland, treasurer of the county.
- John G. Stover, county surveyor.
- J. W. G. Smith, judge of Hustings Court of Staunton.
- N. Argenbright, clerk of Hustings Court of Staunton.
- A. C. Gordon, mayor of Staunton.
- Edward Echols, commonwealth's attorney for Staunton.
- William D. Runnels, sergeant for Staunton.
- James H. Waters, chief of police for Staunton.
- John W. Carroll, city treasurer.
- Geo. H. Hudson, commissioner of revenue for Staunton.



The Physiography of Augusta County, Virginia.

By Jed. Hotchkiss.

The Physiography of Augusta county—its descriptive natural Geography,—like that of any region of equal or greater extent, properly embraces the following subjects:

- 1st. Its position and general relations.
- 2nd. The extent and character of its surface.
- 3rd. Its waters and their distribution.
- 4th. Its geology—the condition of its rocky skeleton, including a description of its soils and minerals.
- 5th. The nature of its climate.
- 6th. Its animal and vegetable productions.
- 7th. Its people, their origin, condition, occupations, etc.

I. Position and General Relations.

Augusta county is situated between 37° 54' and 38° 29' North latitude, and 78° 45' and 79° 28' West longitude. Its place in the United States is midway between the northern corner of Maine and the southwestern corner of Mississippi near New Orleans, and midway between the Capes of Virginia and the mouth of the Big Sandy at the corner of Ohio, Kentucky and West Virginia.

Its position in Virginia is, in part, that of a northwestern border county, as it adjoins Pendleton county, West Virginia. It is, on an average, 200 miles northwest from the Capes of Virginia, and 100 miles northwest from Richmond, the capital of Virginia. In reference to the Great Valley of Virginia, in which most of its area lies, and the boundaries of the state, it is 100 miles southwest from where the West Virginia line crosses The Valley, and 200 miles northeast from where The Valley is crossed by the Tennessee line.

Topographically this county occupies the upper portion, the southwestern, of the Northeastern plateau of The Great Valley grand division of Virginia,—that of the upper portion of the basin of the Shenandoah river. The watershed of the James and the Shenandoah crosses the southwesternly portion of the county, so a portion of it is included in the Central plateau of The Great Valley, that drained by the James and the Roanoke rivers.

Strictly speaking, this county embraces portions of three of the natural grand divisions of Virginia: Its southeastern line runs along the crest of the Blue Ridge, consequently the westerly slopes of that chain along this boundary are within this county and constitute its portion of the Blue Ridge grand division of Virginia. The larger portion of its territory, the valley region proper, that lying between the Blue Ridge and the North mountains, is in The Valley grand division of Virginia. The northwestern portion of the county, the mountain region westward of the great limestone valley, is part of Apalachian Virginia.

Augusta county is bounded: On the northeast by Rockingham; on the southeast by Albemarle and Nelson; on the southwest by Rockbridge and Bath counties, of Virginia; and on the northwest by Bath and Highland counties, of Virginia, and Pendleton county, of West Virginia.

As originally organized, in 1738, this county

embraced all the region west of the Blue Ridge, "northerly, westerly and southerly, beyond the said mountains, to the utmost limits of Virginia," except the territory lying northeast of a line extending from the head spring of the Potomac to the head spring of the Rappahannock, a line corresponding to the present northeastern line of Rockingham county extended to the top of the Blue Ridge on the southeast and to the corner of Maryland at the head of the Potomac on the northwest. These original limits, as then understood, extended this county from the Blue Ridge westward to the Pacific ocean, and from 36° 30' North latitude indefinitely northward. From this imperial domain, as population spread westward, counties, which afterwards became states, and counties from which dozens of other counties were subsequently formed, were, from time to time, taken, until it was reduced to its present, but still noble dimensions in 1790.

II. Extent and Character of Surface.

This county has an average length of about 29.5 miles, with the trend of The Great Valley of Virginia, in a northeast-southwest direction, from the Rockbridge county line on the southwest to the Rockingham county line on the northeast. Its breadth, in a southeast-northwest direction, varies from 24 miles on the Rockbridge line, on the southwest, to 32 miles on the Rockingham line, on the northeast; it is widest, 36 miles, on a line from the Pendleton-Highland corner, on the Shenandoah mountain, to Beagle gap on the Blue Ridge; its average breadth is about 34 miles. Its general form is that of a rude rectangle extending from the crest of the Blue Ridge on the southeast to the crest of the Shenandoah-Cow-pasture mountains on the northwest, across The Great Valley of Virginia (here called the Shenandoah Valley) and at right angles to its general direction. It is 42 miles from the northern corner of the county to the southern, on a nearly north-and-south line.

The horizontal extent of the surface of this county is not far from 1,000 square miles. This area is divided among the Magisterial districts of the county and the City of Staunton about in the following proportions:

North River.....	200	Middle River.....	140
The Pastures.....	269	South River.....	160
Beverley Manor.....	90	Riverheads.....	140
Staunton City, in corporate limits....	1		

In a general way there are two kinds of surface in this county: First, that of an undulating and rolling valley-like plateau, which embraces about 600 square miles, or three-fifths of the entire area of the county,—including under this head the larger stream-valleys of the mountain region. Second, that which may properly be classed as mountain country, embracing the ridges and spurs of the Blue Ridge, which occupy about 120 square miles of the southeastern border of the county, and the parallel ranges and spurs of the Apalachian mountains, which occupy about 280 square miles of the northwestern portion of the county; making the mountain regions embrace about 400

square miles in all, or about two-fifths of the county.

The relief, or elevation above sea-level, of the surface of this county has a range of about 3,500 feet. The junction of the rivers at Port Republic, some 2.5 miles from the Augusta line, is 1,000 feet above tide level, and so the junction of North and Middle rivers at the county line is but a few feet more; the summit of Mount Rogers, probably the highest land in the county, is 4,500 feet above tide. The valley portion proper of the county, that between the Blue Ridge and the Little North mountains, lies between 1,000 and 2,000 feet of altitude, only a few isolated points within this area rising above the latter level; within these limits of relief are also included all, or nearly all, the cultivated stream-valleys of the mountain region. The remaining range of elevation, that between 2,000 and 4,500, is occupied by the slopes and crests of the mountains, some of the latter embracing considerable areas of elevated table lands. It is necessary to add that portions of the mountain region adjacent to the lower levels of the valley country are embraced in the relief lines below 2,000 feet.

The distribution of the areas of the county in reference to their elevation above tide-level, within certain limits, is, approximately, as follows:

Area between 1,000 and 1,200 feet,	308 square miles.
Do do 1,200 " 1,400 "	186 " "
Do do 1,400 " 1,600 "	210 " "
Do do 1,600 " 1,800 "	207 " "
Do do 1,800 " 2,000 "	165 " "
Do do 2,000 " 3,500 "	164 " "
Do do 3,500 " 4,000 "	33 " "
Do above 4,000 "	5 " "

There are two general slopes to most of the county; the larger portion of it is drained by the Shenandoah, the basin of which has the northeastward slope by which that river, conforming to the general direction of The Great Valley of Virginia, finds its way to the Potomac, and the southeastern by which the waters of the Shenandoah are all led, sooner or later, across The Valley to the main trough of the river basin near the western foot of the Blue Ridge. In consequence of these drainage features the general aspect of the relief of most of the county is to the eastward; still there are, within its limits, large areas having all possible exposures, since its drainage lines lead towards all points of the compass.

The general arrangement of the surface features of this county is in six parallel belts, five single and one double, corresponding in the direction of their length, or very nearly so, with the northeast-southwest trend of the mountain ranges of the region, and coinciding in extension and breadth with the geological formations that underlie the surface.

These belts of surface features, taking them in the order of their position in crossing the county from the southeast to the northwest, may be designated and described as follows:

1. The Eastern Blue Ridge belt.
2. The Western Blue Ridge belt.
3. The Sandy or Drift belt.

4. The Limestone belt and its Eastern and Western branches.

5. The Slaty and Shaly belt.

6. The Apalachian belt.

1. *The Eastern Blue Ridge belt* embraces all of the Blue Ridge mountain chain within the limits of this county that is underlain by and mainly derived from the epidotic, hornblendic, granitic and other rocks of the Archæan or old Metamorphic and Primary groups. It is a region of mountains disposed in ridges and knobs with boldly rounded outlines. Its soils are warm and rich, and well adapted to the growth of grains and grasses of all kinds, and especially suited to grapes, apples, and all kinds of temperate climate fruits.

Only a portion of the length of the Blue Ridge region of this county is embraced in this belt; it is limited to a strip some nineteen miles long, and less than one mile in average breadth, that extends from the southwestern end of Humpback mountain, including that range, northeastward to Jarman gap and projects eastwardly; it is Augusta's portion of the Eastern Blue Ridge.

2. *The Western Blue Ridge belt* includes all of the Blue Ridge region of this county not embraced in the preceding belt. It is a country made up of rocky, stony, slaty, or sandy ridges, spurs, knobs, plateaus, and narrow stream-valleys of a similar character, all chiefly derived from and underlain by the rocks of the Potsdam, or No. 1, group.

From the Rockingham line southwest to Jarman gap all of the Blue Ridge region belongs to this belt; from Jarman gap to opposite Sherando it includes only the westerly portion of that chain. As a whole, from opposite Sherando to the Rockingham line, it is mainly a broken ridge, spur, knob, and narrow stream-valley belt, some 16 miles long and from 2 to 2.5 miles wide. From opposite Sherando to the Rockbridge line it is the great hundred-square-miles salient of the Big Levels plateau and the rocky and stony spurs that project to the northeast and to the southwest from that plateau between the narrow valleys through which run the head streams of the South rivers of the Shenandoah and the James. This is a region some 12 miles long, and from 3 to 8 miles wide, that may be characterized as poor mountains and hollows, valuable only for the minerals they contain and for the timber of a scant forest growth. As a whole it projects squarely and boldly westward into the Great Valley, forming a striking feature in the landscape, and, to nearly the extent of its area, narrows the breadth of that valley.

3. *The Sandy or Drift belt*, that of the piney woods, succeeds the Western Blue Ridge one as a strip of moderately sloping or nearly flat land, from one to three miles wide, lying along and adjacent to the western foot of the Western Blue Ridge and forming the first belt of the Great Valley proper. It is a portion of the great limestone valley that has been overrun by the sands, bowlders, and hydro-mica and other clays, derived mainly from the waste of the destruction and decay of the Potsdam rocks of the preceding belt, that has drifted westwardly during a long period of time. This material is generally poor in fertilizing ingredients, consequently most of this belt has a lean soil, one that is better adapted to the growth of pine and oak forests than to agriculture or grazing.

4. *The Limestone belt* succeeds the sandy one on the west; it is that of The Valley lands proper, those immediately underlain by, and mainly derived from the Valley limestone, or Siluro-Cambrian rocks, and is, by far, the most valuable and attractive portion of the county. At the Rockbridge line this belt is single, with a breadth of about 12 miles, extending from the Sandy belt on the east to the Apalachian one on the west, at the foot of Little North mountain, occupying the larger por-

tion of the width of The Valley. This single belt continues some 7 miles northeast from the Rockbridge line, to a point about 2 miles northeast from Greenville where it is met by the 5th belt, the Slaty one, that comes down like a long tongue, from the northeast, from the Rockingham line, and is divided into two limestone belts, an Eastern and a Western, that continue across the county to the northeast, on each side of the 5th or Slaty belt, to the Rockingham line.

This Limestone belt where single, from the Rockbridge line some 7 miles northeast, occupies nearly 80 square miles of surface. It there presents the typical surface features of a Middle Cambrian (Lower Silurian) limestone country, one made up of broadly and gently undulating uplands diversified by ridge-like swells and cherty knobs, and crossed in nearly all directions by winding stream-valleys that vary in their dimensions from point to point.

This is a region having a wide range of adaptations; it is a natural blue-grass country the larger portion of which is the best of plow-land or pasture-land; land good for wheat or corn, or for other grains, favorable to the raising of fruit, and that naturally clothes itself with park-like forests chiefly of hard-woods.

The Eastern Limestone belt branches from the main or single belt, about 2 miles to the northeast of Greenville, with a breadth of about 7 miles, thence it continues some 24 miles to the northeast, bounded, in a general way, by South river on the east and by Christian creek and its extension as Middle river on the west, to the Rockingham line, where it is only about 3 miles wide, narrowing gradually to the northeast as its bounding rivers, South and Middle, approach each other in flowing to their confluence just beyond the county. This belt contains about 120 square miles of surface; it has the same general characteristics as the single belt from which it branches, but its surface is more gently undulated and valley-like.

The Western Limestone belt, like the Eastern, branches from the main or single belt about 2 miles to the northeast of Greenville, where it has a breadth of about 11 miles, and continues for about 22 miles northeast to the Rockingham line, where it is about 12 miles wide, from the mouth of Naked creek to Little North (Narrow-back) mountain; it embraces about 240 square miles of surface. This belt is quite uniform in its breadth for its entire length between the Slaty and the Apalachian belts, being, in reality, a portion of the wide Western limestone valley of the Great Valley. Its features and characteristics are those of the main portion of the limestone belt as described above.

5. *The Slaty and Shaly belt* lies between the two branches of the Limestone belt; it may be described as a long and narrow tongue of surface features that projects southwestwardly into this county, from the Rockingham line between the mouth of North river and the mouth of Naked creek, some 23 miles to the vicinity of Greenville, taking, in virtue of its location, about 80 square miles of territory from what would otherwise have been a single Limestone belt the whole length of the county. This Slaty belt extends but about four-fifths of the length of the county and not entirely across it, as do the others except the first; it has a nearly uniform breadth of about 4 miles, but tapers to a tongue-like point at its southwestern end.

This Slaty and Shaly belt is carved from the slates, shales, impure limestones, and other rocks of an area of the Siluro-Cambrian or Upper Cambrian group (No. III of the Virginia survey), that here occupies a trough in the Valley, or No. II limestone; its surface is very much broken into steep-sided ravines and sharply-rounded hills with

numerous narrow stream-valleys and plateau-like divides; portions of it furnish good soils for small grains and fruits, while other portions are poor. Its relief when seen near by is a conspicuous feature of the topography of The Valley.

6. *The Apalachian belt* is the mountain-and-valley portion of the county situate westward of The Valley; it is Augusta's portion of Apalachian Virginia; a territory nearly 30 miles long and from 8 to 10 miles wide, and occupying nearly 250 square miles, or about one-fourth, of the area of the county. This belt may be said to consist, in a general way, of three approximately parallel ranges of mountains, extending northeast and southwest, two of them the whole length of the county and one nearly the whole length, with main and lateral valleys between these ranges and their branches. These mountain ranges, taken in order from The Valley westward, are: The Little North, under various names; the Great North, the middle and dominating range, but shortest of the three, also under various names; and the Shenandoah mountain range, also variously named, on which is the westerly boundary of the county. About half of this region is drained to the southwest by the waters of the James, and about half to the northeast by those of the Shenandoah. It is a region greatly varied in its surface features, since it has been shaped from the rocks of four great groups of geological formations, the Siluro-Cambrian, the Silurian (Upper Silurian of some), the Devonian, and the Lower Sub-Carboniferous, from formations III to X, inclusive, of the Virginia survey. Its valleys are mostly rather lean Devonian ones, but these are frequently bordered by Lower Helderberg, No. VI, limestone bands of great fertility and especially adapted to grass, so that the valleys of this region that drain into the James are known as "The Pastures." The mountain ranges are generally rough and comparatively poor, though banded, some of them, by fertile belts as one rock formation or another underlies the surface. It is mainly a forestal, mineral, and grazing region.

III. The Waters of Augusta County.

The waters of this county belong to two distinct river basins of the Chesapeake bay drainage system: 1. The waters of the James river basin flowing southwestwardly; 2. The waters of the Potomac basin flowing northeastwardly. About 200 square miles of the county drains into the James and about 800 into the Potomac.

The Augusta-Rockbridge line, crossing The Valley at right angles to its length, was located so as to put all the head-springs of the Shenandoah river of the Potomac in Augusta, therefore only the interlocking head-waters of the James come within its borders.

The drainage system of the county referred to Chesapeake bay may be thus tabulated:

Chesapeake bay,	{	James river,	{	North river.
		Potomac river,	{	S. fork Shenandoah river.

The "divide," or watershed, between the James and the Shenandoah (Potomac) waters, crosses the county somewhat in the line of a rude circle described from the confluence of North and South rivers of the Shenandoah at Port Republic, with a radius of from 25 to 31 miles in length, from the Bald knob in the Blue Ridge on the east to the Counties-corner knob on the Shenandoah mountain on the west, as one may see by tracing it on the general map of the county. The most distant point in the divide from the confluence centre, 31.5 miles, is near Old Providence church and the Rockbridge line.

It is interesting to note the altitude, or elevation above sea-level, of points in this water-parting, as

it gives a good idea not only of the rapid drainage here prevalent, but also of the vast amount of water-power existing in the county. These altitudes are more suggestive when it is recalled that the confluence of North and South rivers, just outside the county, is about 1,000 feet above tide. The altitudes, in feet, of these points in the divide are: Bald knob of Blue Ridge, about 3,600; Lofton station of Shenandoah Valley RR., 1,785; near Old Providence church, about 2,000; near Middlebrook, about 1,850; along Little North mountain, 2,500 to 3,000; at North Mountain station of Chesapeake & Ohio Ry., 2,070; top of Mount Rogers, 4,458; turnpike near Lebanon Springs, 2,070; and knob on Shenandoah mountain, about 4,000 feet. This shows that the range of fall in the streams of this county is nearly 3,500 feet.

1. The James river waters of this county are all tributaries of North river of the James, a stream that flows southward across the adjoining county of Rockbridge. Only the upper reaches of these tributaries are in Augusta; they all flow southwardly from the divide. Taking them in the order in which they run from the county, from west to east, these James river streams may be thus tabulated:

North river of James.	Big Calf-pasture river.	Ramsey draft.
		Hamilton draft.
	Little Calf-pasture river.	Mill creek.
		Wm. Dry branch.
Walker creek.	Ramsey branch.	
Moffett creek and branches.	Furnace run.	
South river.	Smith creek.	
	Marl run.	
	Spy run.	

The Big Calf-pasture and the Little Calf-pasture unite a few miles beyond the Rockbridge line and form North river of the James. These rivers and their tributaries drain nearly half of the Appalachian belt of Augusta. They are variable mountain streams the upper portions of which are frequently dry in summer and fall; along the lower half of their courses in this county they are fed by numerous bold limestone springs, and so become reliable mill streams. In Augusta the Big Calf-pasture falls nearly 1,500 feet in a direct course of about 24 miles, and the Little Calf-pasture some 600 feet in a course of 12 miles. Bold spring branches flow into Big Calf-pasture all along the eastern base of Walker mountain, notably Mill creek which is fed by noble springs. Little Calf-pasture has reliable spring-fed branches in Furnace run, Smith creek and others near Pond gap and Craigsville. The Ferrol springs, Black spring of Smith creek, Moss spring of Mill creek, and Marble spring near King station, are noteworthy.

Walker and Moffett creeks drain a portion of the Limestone belt into Hays creek of North river of James; the former has a direct length of about four and the latter of about six miles. Moffett creek has a number of branches. These are all permanent spring-fed streams with a rapid fall; Moffett creek is a noted mill stream.

South river of the James is in this county mainly a variable mountain stream draining part of the Western Blue Ridge belt; its direct length is about ten miles; it has a large gathering ground and a rapid fall. Its Marl run, a county-line stream, though short, is a noted mill and factory stream flowing from numerous fine springs in the Limestone belt and having a fall of several hundred feet in a few miles.

2. The Potomac basin waters of Augusta are all tributaries of the South fork of the Shenandoah river of that basin. All these tributaries from this county flow into either the North or the South river of the South fork, two streams that unite at Port Republic, about 2.5 miles beyond the limits of this county in Rockingham, and form the South fork of the Shenandoah.

Few drainage basins present such a symmetrical and full-branched hydrological tree as does the

South fork of the Shenandoah as it ramifies through 800 square miles of the county of Augusta from its trunk at Port Republic. All its headsprings are included in the curve of a circle rudely described with a radius of from about 25 to 31 miles long from the confluence of the two main branches at Port Republic. The air-line distances from that confluence to the principal head-springs are: To head of Back creek of South river, 29.5 miles; to head of South river near Rockbridge line beyond Old Providence church, 31.5 miles; to head of Christian creek, south of Middlebrook, 28.5 miles; to head of Middle river, near Mt. Zion church, 31 miles; to Elliot spring, on Mount Rogers, 28 miles; to head of Jennings branch, near Lebanon springs, 26 miles; to head of Moffett branch, beyond Stribling Springs, 25 miles; to head of North river, at North River gap of Shenandoah mountain, 28 miles, and to head of Briery branch, at North corner of county, 25.5 miles.

The principal branches of North river in this county may be thus tabulated:

From the northwest.	1. Flat run.	From the southwest.	1. White-oak lick.
	2. Broad run.		2. Freemason run.
	3. Skidmore fork.		3. Mossy creek.
	4. Stony run.		4. Long glade.
	5. Little river.		5. Golden run.
	6. Lick run.		6. Naked creek.
	7. Thorny branch.		7. Middle river.
	8. Briery branch.		

The affluents of North river from the northwest are mountain streams, mainly from the Appalachian belt, and very variable in character. Those from the southwest, except White-oak lick and Freemason run, are fine, permanent streams. Mossy creek and Naked creek are remarkable mill streams, noted for their full and steady volume of water and for the superior water-power they furnish. Long glade is a steady stream, but has a moderate fall. Numerous noble limestone springs supply these creeks, such as the remarkable one at the head of Mossy creek.

Middle river, though in deference to local usage classed above as a branch of North river, is the chief river of the county, having the largest gathering ground and volume of any. It drains over 300 square miles of the central portion of the county, or about one-third of its entire area, including all the Slaty belt, large portions of the Main and the Eastern Limestone belts, a large part of the Western Limestone belt, and a part of the Appalachian belt. Its head springs are the most distant from the point of confluence and the highest in altitude of any of the county rivers, and it is, both in direct and in developed length, considerably the longest stream in Augusta.

The more important tributaries of Middle river, taken in order from its source downward, are:

From the north and west.	1. Mountain run.	From the south and west.	1. Back creek.
	2. Story run.		2. Baker (Hoover) creek.
	3. Christian run.		3. Bell creek.
	4. Turnpike run.		4. Berry creek.
	5. Buffalo branch.		5. Falling-spring run.
	6. Jennings branch.		6. Crawford run.
	7. Moffett branch.		7. Lewis creek.
	8. Allen (Stuart) creek.		8. Christian creek.
	9. Stone-church (Walker) creek.		9. Long-meadows run.
	10. Frames run.		10. Round-hill run.
	11. Broad run.		11. Crawford draft.

The following extract from Hotchkiss' *Physiography of Virginia*, page 146, furnishes additional information: "Middle river, the upper portion of the Shenandoah proper, rises in and flows diagonally across Augusta in a N. 56° E. course, draining the central portion of that county. This river is fed by a remarkable number of bold, constant springs. Its tributaries are numerous and have many branches; the chief ones are: from

the left, from the North mountains; Buffalo br., 10 ms. long, falls some 2,500' from its head spring on Mount Rogers, and has a Dry br.; Jennings br., 12 ms., falls some 400', has Whiskey cr. br.; Moffett br. 12 ms., has Elk-run br. and Stribling sps.; Augusta church (Stone church) run, 3 ms.; Frames run, 5 ms.; Broad run, 6 ms., from Mt. Sidney:—from the right, from the middle belt of the Valley, Back cr., 10 ms., from near Middlebrook, falls over 400'; Baker cr., 10 ms.; Bell cr., 6 ms.; Lewis cr., 12 ms.; Staunton located on, falls over 500'; Christian cr., 19 ms. air-line, near 40 by channel, very crooked, cut deeply into Siluro-Cambrian slates, falls over 600', and has many branches, one, Boys mill cr., 12 ms. long, falls over 300'; Long-meadows run or draft, 10 ms., from near Fishersville, and Crawford draft, 6 ms."

And, from page 56, of same work:—"The Middle river of the Shenandoah, in Augusta, furnishes a good illustration of the character and condition of the streams of the whole Valley in reference to their adaptation to manufacturing or irrigating purposes; its *direct length*, that is the air-line distance from its source to its junction with North river, is 30 miles, while its *developed length*, that of its actual channel, is 68 miles, and in that distance it has fallen about 1,000 feet, all of which fall can be utilized, for the volume of water at its very source is ample for turning a mill. The aggregate direct length of that river and its ten principal affluents, in the same county, is 122 miles, while their developed length is 233."

South river of the South fork of the Shenandoah is the stream that drains most of the Blue Ridge belts of this county, and yet, except in the rainy seasons, it obtains most of its regular supply of water from the short spring-branches, that, as a rule, flow into it from the western or Valley side of its channel; the exceptions, as now recalled, are the "Big" spring, near Waynesboro, and the "Bold" spring, near Patterson.

The more important tributaries of South river, from the north and west, all short but full-volume spring-branches, are:

1. Buffalo run.	4. Harter run.
2. Stuart draft.	5. Porterfield run.
3. Silver creek.	6. Koiner run.

The tributaries of South river from the south and east, all variable mountain branches, are very numerous; the named ones, from its source down, are:

1. Poor cr.	10. Steele run.
2. Pine run.	11. Sawmill run.
3. Love run.	12. Blackwater run.
4. Stony run.	13. McClure run.
5. John run.	14. Patrick run.
6. Kennedy run.	15. Turk run.
7. Patton run.	16. Meadow run.
8. Back cr.	17. Paine run.
9. Rockfish run.	18. Stull run.

Back creek, the largest and most important of these, has a number of branches.

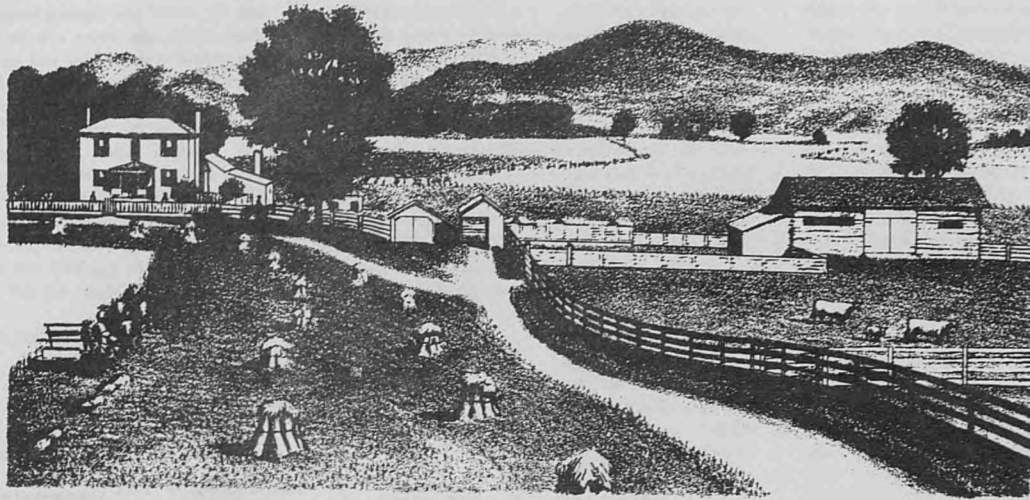
South river, from its head springs near Old Providence church to its mouth, falls nearly 1,000 feet in a direct length of about 32 miles and a developed one of about 50 miles.

The streams of Augusta county, fed by hundreds of as bold and steady-flowing springs of pure water as can be found in any country, furnish, in the aggregate, over 400 miles of length and 8,000 feet of fall that can be made available for manufacturing or irrigating purposes. It is one of the best drained counties in the Union.

The mineral springs of this county are treated of in the next chapter, with its minerals; they are quite numerous.

IV. Geology, Mineralogy, Etc.

The subjects of this chapter are the rocks, the minerals, and the soils of Augusta county, as such terms are scientifically understood. This county



RESIDENCE OF BENJ. F. SMITH, SOUTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



" ROSEMONT "

RESIDENCE OF J. N. M^o FARLAND, BEVERLEY MANOR DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.

is quite remarkable for the number and extent of the geological formations and for the number and variety of the minerals and soils found within its borders.

Of the four grand divisions of the age of the world as recorded in its rocks, as recognized by geologists, three are represented in this county: the Eozoic, the Paleozoic and the Cenozoic; only the third in order of time, the Mesozoic, is entirely wanting.

Of the twelve general groups into which all the known rock-masses of the earth are subdivided, seven, as recorded in the table given below, are represented here, and only five, the Middle and the Upper Carboniferous, the Lower and the Upper Mesozoic, and the Tertiary are entirely wanting.

The following geological table includes the formations now known in this county, and their groupings and equivalents, arranged after the Virginia geological table of Prof. Wm. B. Rogers, the Director of the Geological Survey of Virginia in 1835-41, as used in his *Geology of the Virginias*, to which reference can be made for illustrations from this county.

Geological Table for Augusta County:

Ages.	General Groups.	Subdivisions, or Formations in Augusta.	Va. Survey Nos.	Pa. Rogers' Names.												
4. Cenozoic.	2. Quaternary.	20. Quaternary.	Va. Survey Nos.													
	6. Lower Carboniferous (Lower Sub-Carb.)	13 a. Montgomery Grits and Coal Measures. (Tuedian?)				X.	Vespertine Sandstone and Coal.									
								12. Catakill.	IX.	Ponent.						
											11 b. Chemung.	VIII.	Vergent.			
														11 a. Portage.	VIII.	Cadent.
	10 b. Hamilton.	VIII.				Cadent.										
	10 a. Marcellus.	VIII.				Cadent.										
	5. Devonian.	8. Oriskany.				VII.	Meridian.									
7. Lower Helderberg.			VI.	Pre-Meridian.												
					6. Salina.			V.	Scalent.							
										5 c. Niagara.	V.	Surgent.				
													5 b. Clinton.	V.	Surgent.	
5 a. Medina.	IV.	Levant.														
2. Paleozoic.	4. Silurian.	4 c. Hudson River.	III.	Matinal.												
					3. Siluro-Cambrian, or Upper Cambrian.	4 b. Utica.	III.	Matinal.								
									4 a. Trenton.	III.	Matinal.					
												3 c. Chazy.	II.	Auroral.		
															3 b. Lewis.	II.	Auroral.
3 a. Calciferous.	II.	Auroral.														
2. Middle Cambrian.	2 b. Potsdam group.	I.	Primal.													
				1. Lower Cambrian.												
1. Azolic.	Archæan.	1 c. Huronian.	Primary, etc.													

It is sufficient, in this brief summary, to say that the generally accepted theory of the upbuilding of the earth to the condition in which it is now found, is: That it was originally created as a mere mass of mineral matter, "without form," as forcibly stated in Genesis. That from this mass—much of which still remains to form the great interior body of the earth, the foundation upon which is built up the earth's crust as we know it—by the action of the elements the materials have been obtained (ground or worn off) from which, more or less modified by the concurrent growth and decay of vegetable and animal life, successive layers (strata) of rocks, as we now find them, have been formed and deposited, generally in oceanic waters, one upon another, in a uniform order, until the recognized geological column or crust of the earth was completed. Subsequent upthrows, downthrows, foldings, faultings, and other disturbances of the earth's crust, forced these formations into the broken, folded, ridged, troughed, and other disturbed conditions in which they are now found, each one still retaining its characteristic features and its relations to the others, thus enabling the geologist to recognize each formation wherever it may be exposed.

The geological table above given, read from the bottom upward, is a list of these formations, or groups of strata, arranged in the order of their creation, from the first or oldest at the bottom to

the latest or youngest at the top, as (so far as now known) exposed in this county. It represents the succession of these formations when undisturbed.

The third column of the table is the list of these formations here found as they are generally named and treated in geological works. They are here numbered, in succession, from 1d. to 13a., then an interval for the formations that are lacking in this county, and then 20. The letters after these numbers indicate subdivisions of the formations, a. representing the bottom one, b. the next above, etc. The names following these numbers are those, excepting 1, 13 and 20, that were given to the formations by the New York State geologists, and that have been generally adopted.

In the fourth column these formations from 2 to 13, inclusive, are indicated by the Roman numerals from I. to X. These are known as the Virginia and Pennsylvania names of the formations, because when Prof. Wm. B. Rogers began to study the rocks of Virginia, in 1835, he ascertained their American order and succession (facts before unknown), and designated the groups of the rocks he found in Virginia by these numbers, counting from the Archæan—which he considered the foundation and did not number—upward; calling the rocks of the first group, those that he found on the western flanks of the Blue Ridge, Formation No. I.; those next in order, and resting upon No. I., the Valley limestones, he called Formation No. II.; and so on upward, as he found these formations succeeding each other in the Virginias, to No. XVI. Prof. H. D. Rogers, his brother, adopted the same numbers in first describing the formations of Pennsylvania.—No better system of naming the formations for common local use can possibly be devised, since the succession and relations of numbers are always known quantities. These numbers in Virginia

are associated with clearly defined and readily distinguished groups of rocks, so they will always be retained in familiar use in the Virginias and in Pennsylvania. In the fifth column are the names of the formations, derived from classic terms descriptive of different portions of the natural day, that the Rogers brothers adopted as names for the different formations that should be suggestive of their relative ages. These were used in the final report of the first geological survey of Pennsylvania. The table harmonizes and correlates all these names and shows the groupings of the formations. Frequent reference to this table will aid in comprehending the following brief descriptions of the geological formations found in this county and of their mineral contents, beginning with the lowest and oldest.

1c. *The Huronian* portion of this county, the one in which this formation of the Archæan group is exposed, is that before described as the Eastern Blue Ridge belt, that including Humpback mountain and its extension northeastwardly, as the eastern part of the Blue Ridge range, to the vicinity of Jarman gap. Its rocks, most of which may be seen at the Blue Ridge tunnel of the C. & O. Ry., are here mica and hornblende schists, chlorite slates, and granitic and syenitic rocks of various kinds.

The rocks of this formation decompose into a fertile soil, one rich in potash. In it are found de-

posits of specular and magnetic iron ores, and in Rockbridge county tin ore.

2b. *The Potsdam group, Formation No. I.* The Lower Cambrian, is exposed in the region designated the Western Blue Ridge, embracing in that term all of that mountain chain in this county not described above as Huronian. The rocks of this group are exposed in two somewhat distinct areas: 1. A southern one, composed of the mountains and included valleys of the Big-levels region in the Rockbridge-Nelson corner of the county; and 2. A northern one, including all the Potsdam region northeast from Sherando. The rocks of No. I are: conglomerates, shaly grits, slates, massive sandstones, and ferriferous shales, generally in this order from below upward; they are abundantly exposed, both in place and wonderfully broken up, in all the western spurs and ridges of the Blue Ridge chain, and a large part of the "waste" of sand, clay, boulders, etc., that covers the Sandy belt along the foot of the Blue Ridge, is from the rocks of this group.

The soils derived from the decay of the Potsdam rocks alone, are generally poor and "cold." In the ferriferous shales of the upper portion of this group there are extensive deposits of limonite, or brown iron ore, and manganese; mines have been opened in these at the Fauver, McCormick, Black-rock, Mine, Bare, Kennedy, Mt. Torry, and other "ore-banks" of the southern exposures of this formation; and at the Alexander, Dowell, Rockfish-run, Hanger, Mike-knob, and Crimora "ore banks," in the northern exposures. In the lower shales and shaly grits of this group there are found, in some places, deposits of specular and other iron ores, generally lean. The sandstones of this group decay into the best of glass-sand, beds of which are common; and from the decay of some of the upper slates come extensive beds of China and fire, and other useful clays, as at the Virginia China-clay and Fire-brick works. Chalybeate springs also flow from these shales, like the Black-rock springs on Paine run.

3 a. b. c. *The Calciferous, Lewis and Crazy, Formation No. II.* The Middle Cambrian general group, is exposed in this county in the Valley Limestone belts before described. This is the great formation of the county, as well as of The Valley, and its rocks outcrop or underlie the surface of a larger area than do those of any other within the limits of the county. It may be said to extend from the western base of the Blue Ridge to the eastern one of the North mountains, since it is merely covered up by drift material in a good portion of the Sandy belt, in the east, and the Slaty belt is but a long and narrow remnant of the next higher formation, No. III, resting in a depression of this formation (No. II) along the Christian creek axis, the lowest of the county. The rocks of this group are generally argillaceous and arenaceous (shaly and sandy) limestones at the bottom, with heavy beds of magnesian limestone above, succeeded by cherty and sandy beds. These are so folded, faulted and involved, one with another, as to render it often difficult to distinguish the different members at a given locality, although in many parts of the county there are well-defined belts of country underlain by single members of this group; especially is this true of the magnesian or dolomitic member, as in the Eastern Limestone belt.

Rogers estimated the thickness of the beds of No. II to be nearly 10,000 feet, some 7,000 of which is magnesian limestone. The poorest carbonate of lime is in the upper beds of the formation. Beds of hornstone, or chert, often appearing as great, flinty masses, forming knobly hills, like Betsy Bell, Mary Gray, White, Round, Sugar-loaf, and others of the county, are quite common in the middle and upper portions of No. II.

The soils derived from this formation are the heavy clays and loams that are known as "limestone land;" they vary in character as do the strata of this formation. The minerals here found in or with the Valley limestone, are: Beds of iron ore, in the form of pockets, generally found on or near the flinty ridges or knobs, as on those near Staunton and Mossy creek; tuffaceous marl, in beds along the streams from which it has been deposited; beds of limestone, some good for burning into architectural and agricultural lime, and others hydraulic in character and good for making cement; brick-clays abound, also clays suitable for tile and common pottery purposes; umbers and ochres are also common. Small quantities of barytes, and of lead, zinc, and silver ores have been found at several places in this formation. The numerous bold springs that issue from these rocks in all parts of the Limestone belts are all mineral springs, since they are all carbonated, more or less, with lime or magnesia, or with other mineral substances, like Seawright's.

4 a. b. c., the Trenton, Utica and Hudson River, Formation No. III, the Siluro-Cambrian, or Upper Cambrian, general group of rocks, underlies all of the Slaty belt portion of this county, as before described, and also a somewhat narrow strip all along the eastern foot and slope of the Little North mountains, variously named, from the Rockbridge to the Rockingham line, thus including bordering portions of the Limestone and the Appalachian belts of surface. In the Slaty belt, that of Christian creek-Middle river, as before stated, these rocks are disposed, in a general way, in a trough or syncline; in the North mountains belt they are more or less vertical in position.

The strata composing Formation No. III in this county are slates of various colors—black, dark greenish, light greenish buff, brown or red, with interstratified thin beds of limestone and hard or soft sandstones. Some of these slates are calcareous, and on these are the fertile, warm, slate soils of the Slaty belt; but where the slates are argillaceous or arenaceous the soil is usually rather poor. Some of the springs flowing from No. III are more or less chalybeate, sulphurous, or aluminous from percolating through its slates containing iron pyrites, etc. Beds of iron ore are found in the upper portion of No. III in parts of Virginia, but none so far in this county, unless the beds at Pond gap belong here.

5a. Medina, Formation No. IV, is a mountain-making formation, as the two preceding ones, Nos. II and III, are valley-makers. This is the bottom formation of the Silurian (upper Silurian of some). It is found in this county as a group of sand-rocks, not far from 1,000 feet thick, standing more or less on edge, forming the crest of the Little North mountains from the Rockbridge line to the Rockingham line, usually rising as a rough wall above the belt of No. III that rests against it on the east; it also forms the backbone and much of the mass of Walker mountain. In Augusta this formation generally consists of two members: the lower a coarse, hard, mottled gray, heavy-bedded conglomerate, often called the Oneida conglomerate; and the upper a purplish brown, thin-bedded and fine-grained sandstone, one that is often mistaken for iron ore.

The coarse sand-rock of this formation is a good building stone; it is used for lining blast-furnaces and sometimes for millstones. The soil from this formation is lean and poor.

5 b. c. and 6., Clinton, Niagara and Solina; Formation No. V, usually spoken of in Virginia as the Clinton, is here a group of sandstones, slates, shales, and beds of iron ore, several hundred feet thick, exposed along the westward crests and slopes of Little North mountain from the Rockbridge line to near North River gap,—but little exposed

northeast of Buffalo gap—outcropping westward of the exposures of No. IV. They also outcrop as narrow bands along Brown and Black-oak ridges, Sideling hill and Walker mountain.

Several beds of iron ore, some called "red-shale" and others "fossil" ore, are found among the shales that lie between the massive sand-rocks of this formation; these have been mined at Buffalo Gap, Ferrol and Esteline. Ochres accompany these ores at some points. The sand-rocks of No. V are good building stones.

7. Lower Helderberg, Formation No. VI, a limestone deposit, outcrops sparingly in this county: in the Little North mountain, at Moffett and Jennings gaps, and along the western flank of that range from opposite Variety Springs to the Rockbridge line, as most of the underlying rocks of the narrow Brown and Black-oak ridges; and as bands around Sideling hill and Walker mountain. This formation generally consists of several beds of limestone, some crystalline, others highly fossiliferous and others massive; cherty beds are common as the top or upper stratum.

Most of the No. VI limestone is a very pure carbonate of lime, that burns into first-class quicklime; it makes excellent flux for blast-furnaces, and is used for this purpose at Buffalo Gap, Ferrol and Esteline. One of the upper beds furnishes a beautiful fancy marble, usually called *encrinial* marble, from the large number of fossil encrinites preserved in it; this marble is quarried by the Coral Marble Company, near Craigsville, and also near Marble Valley P. O., on the Big Calf-pasture. Fine, bold, limestone springs flow out wherever this formation is exposed in this county. Its existence beneath the surface is everywhere indicated by belts of exceedingly rich and fertile soil.

8. Oriskany, Formation No. VII, the top member of the Silurian general group, outcrops in this county, as a narrow band, all along the western slopes of the Little North mountains from the Rockbridge line to that of Rockingham, but concealed at intervals. It appears, for a short distance, near Craigsville, and on the flanks of Sideling hill and Walker mountain. This formation consists of beds of yellowish white or greenish gray sandstones, of a coarse open texture, many of which readily decay into sand resembling yellow granular sugar. In many places in this county these sand-rocks are replaced, partly or wholly, by thick and extensive beds of iron ore, as at Buffalo Gap, North Mountain station, Ferrol, and Esteline, where these ores have been mined extensively; and around Sideling hill and Walker mountain where they are naturally exposed.

The soil from the rocks of No. VII is poor. The iron ores of this formation are abundant and valuable; the sand from its sandstones is good for glass-making.

10 a. b. c., the Marcellus, Hamilton and Genesee, and 11 a. b., the Portage and Chemung, Formation No. VIII, the lower Devonian rocks, underlie all the slaty and shaly valleys of the Appalachian belt and form the numerous, rounded, slaty and shaly knolls and knobby spurs that border these valleys and make the lower slopes of the bordering mountain ranges. It follows from this that a very large portion, probably fully one-half, of the Appalachian belt is underlaid by the Devonian shales, slates, thin-bedded sandstones, and impure limestones of this formation. Valleys and spurs of No. VIII extend the whole length of the county next west of the Little North mountains and west of Brown and Black-oak ridges; the eastward spurs and hollows of the Big North mountain and its Hankey extension are carved from No. VIII; and the Big Calf-pasture valley and the spurs that project into it from Big North mountain on the east and from Shenandoah moun-

tain on the west, are also sculptured from these No. VIII Devonian shales, which are here over 1,500 feet thick.

This formation consists, as a rule, of black fissile slates at the bottom, next to No. VII, such as those seen in the railway cuts and fills near Ferrol; above these are heavier olive green and brownish slates or fine-grained sandstones, such as may be seen in ascending Mount Rogers.

The black shales of No. VIII contain considerable percentages of bituminous matter and thin layers of impure coal, so much so that they will burn for a time, but not consume, and for that reason they are often mistaken for coal. Small pockets of iron ore are found among these shales, and nodules of iron pyrites, spheroidal in form, are quite common. Mineral springs of numerous varieties everywhere flow from this formation, so readily do its rocks decompose and impregnate with the mineral substances they contain the waters that percolate through them; hence iron, alum, sulphur and other mineral springs are common. Some of these are resorted to for health or recreation, such as the Woodell, the Yellow, the Stribling, the Lebanon, the Variety, and the Crawford springs in this county. These shales could be utilized in the manufacture of alum. The soils of VIII are generally thin.

12, the Catskill, Formation No. IX, is an enormously thick group of red and brown intermingled slates and sandstones, of very variable character, that make up the greater portion of the mass of the Big North, the Hankey, and the Shenandoah or Cow-pasture mountains and the high portions of their great spurs. There are fine exposures of these Catskill or upper Devonian rocks in crossing Big North mountain by the Parkersburg turnpike, and along Little river beyond North River gap.

The rocks of IX make a sterile soil, one that sustains, as a rule, only a meagre forest growth. Some of its harder sand-rocks could be used for building purposes.

13a., the Montgomery Grits and Coal measures, Formation No. X, the Lower Sub-Carboniferous, is found in this county as a few patches or fragments held in depressions in formation No. IX. The largest of these, known as the "Dora" coal-field, is a narrow strip that extends into the county from Rockingham, west of Narrow-back mountain, to a short distance southwest of North River gap. A smaller patch also projects for a short distance into this county from Rockingham about half-way between the crests of Narrow-back and Shenandoah mountains. It is possible that the knob above the spring on the top of Mount Rogers belongs to the bottom of No. X.

No. X is here generally composed of three rock-masses: at the bottom a conglomeritic or massive sandstone or quartzite; next slabby sand-rocks, composed of incoherent coarse sand and alumina, with a thin slate and some iron ore, followed by beds of green and black slates with irregular coal beds and thin beds of sandstone; and topped by beds of slabby sandstones abounding in vegetable impressions, as in North River gap.

The areas of this formation in this county are so small it would merit but a mere mention if its importance had not been greatly exaggerated by reports that have been made concerning the anthracite coal of the Narrow-back belt or Dora coal-field. The quality of this coal is good, but it has been badly crushed in the convulsions of this Appalachian region, and the beds are very variable in thickness, and so limited in extent as to be only valuable for a small local demand. This coal is the oldest, or lowest down in the formations, of any in this country that is at all workable.

20, the Quaternary.—The formation last described, No. X, is, so far as ascertained, the upper-

most of the regular formations now remaining in place in this county; the great groups of the Middle and the Upper Carboniferous, that in all probability at one time were in place here above it, have been destroyed and swept away. The Mesozoic and the Tertiary groups, that succeed the Carboniferous in time, probably never existed here to any extent; but the next great group, the last and topmost of the geological column, the Quaternary, is represented in the cave and marl deposits and mineral beds, and in some of the near surface features that have been formed in recent geologic time.

Weyer cave and The Fountains cave, in this county, rank with the most remarkable caverns of the world in the extent and beauty of the varied deposits of lime carbonate of Quaternary age that they contain. Small caves of a similar character are found throughout the Limestone belts of the county. Tufaceous marl of this age abounds along Marl run, near Midway, Lewis creek, near Staunton, Poague run, near Millbrook, and elsewhere in the county.

V. Meteorology.

The climate of Augusta county is one of the most healthy and agreeable for all-the-year-round of any portion of the Union, being equally removed from the extremes of heat and cold that characterize more northern or southern localities and sheltered by high mountain ranges so disposed as to protect it from the violent storms that, with their attendant "weather," so often pass up or down the Atlantic coast region on the east or the Mississippi valley on the west. Its latitude, about 38° North,—that of San Francisco and Southern Maryland in the United States, of Lisbon and Athens in Europe, and Smyrna and Yedo in Asia—would give it the climate of the middle temperate zone, one rather too continuously warm in summer; but here comes in the element of altitude, the range of from 1,000 to 4,500 feet above sea-level here existing, as a modifying agency that tempers the heat of summer, making its high temperatures of short duration and its nights comfortably cool. This element of elevation and its lofty mountain barriers secure it immunity from the damp chilliness peculiar to the lower regions of its latitude in winter and give it a clear, dry, and bracing atmosphere. Its climate is one of means regarded from the standpoint of this continent.

The range of Temperature in this county, by months and seasons, is illustrated by the following table, compiled from observations of a standard Fahrenheit thermometer located at Staunton about 1,500 feet above tide, the mean altitude of the valley portion of the county, giving the maximum, the minimum, and the mean temperature for each month, season, and year, for two years, from the spring of 1869, inclusive, to that of 1871.

Seasons.	Months.	1869-70.			1870-71.		
		Maximum.	Minimum.	Mean.	Maximum.	Minimum.	Mean.
Spring.....	March ..	57°	16°	39.1°	40°	15°	30.7°
	April ..	75°	29°	51.5°	50°	24°	37.7°
	May ..	84°	39°	60.5°	51°	28°	42.7°
Spring means.....				51.0°		34.5°	
Summer.....	June ..	93°	55°	72.2°	59°	34°	71.8°
	July ..	95°	59°	75.5°	59°	34°	75.1°
	August ..	92°	55°	73.0°	57°	31°	72.4°
Summer means.....			74.5°			73.1°	
Autumn.....	Sept ..	83°	44°	64.1°	76°	27°	64.3°
	Oct ..	69°	30°	49.1°	73°	29°	55.0°
	Nov ..	55°	20°	37.5°	65°	29°	44.9°
Autumn means.....			50.5°			54.7°	
Winter.....	Dec ..	55°	21°	37.4°	60°	5°	32.5°
	Jan ..	50°	18°	31.5°	60°	21°	36.7°
	Feb ..	57°	11°	34.1°	60°	10°	39.5°
Winter means.....			34.3°			35.7°	

The highest and the lowest indications of the thermometer during each month give the extremes of temperature, but the means of the seasons show the adaptations of the climate. The observations for the means were made at 7 A.M., and 2 and 9 P.M. of each day.

These spring and summer means were nearly the same as those of Johnstown, Virginia, near the sea, for the same periods, but those of the autumn and winter are considerably lower.

The official Statistical atlas of the United States, prepared to accompany the Ninth, or 1870, census, represents the isotherm, or line of mean annual temperature, of 52° as passing through this county. The maps of the Tenth, or 1880, census, place this county in the isothermal belt of 45° to 50° of mean annual temperature, and in those having a minimum of -10 to -20, and a maximum of 95° to 100°. The mean range and the minima are put too low, and the maxima are put too high to fairly represent the general temperatures of this county. These extremes of cold are those of its most exposed and elevated localities, and those of heat of its most confined and depressed ones, in exceptional seasons.

The mean, or average, temperatures of July and January of any locality are generally taken to fairly represent its summer and winter climates. The maps of the United States census of 1880 place Augusta in the belts having a mean July temperature of 75° to 80°, and a mean January temperature of 25° to 30°. This July temperature may be accepted as characteristic, but that for January is too low, for the reasons before stated.

For comparative purposes the following table of average winter and summer temperatures of various places in North America, compiled from the best authorities, is added.

	Jan.	July.		Jan.	July.
Staunton, Va.....	41°	75°	New Orleans, La.....	54°	80°
Lynchburg, Va.....	44	78	Charleston, S. C.....	48	80
Hampton, Va.....	45	81	New York, N. Y.....	30	75
Wytheville, Va.....	37	74	Boston, Mass.....	25	72
Washington, D. C.....	34	78	Eastport, Me.....	22	62
St. Louis, Mo.....	33	77	Fort Snelling, Minn.....	15	73
St. Paul, Minn.....	14	73	Montreal, Can.....	15	78
Cincinnati, O.....	38	76	The Bermudas.....	32	84

The Rainfall in Augusta county is from 40 to 45 inches, on an average, annually; from 20 to 25 inches of this belong to the average rainfall of spring and summer. This precipitation is generally well distributed throughout the year and in a manner exceedingly favorable for agricultural operations as here conducted. For example, the rains of December and January prepare the earth for the plowing of sod lands for corn or oats, work that is here largely done in February with its mild temperature and moderate rainfall. The rains of March moisten and mellow the ground for the oat-seeding and corn-planting, that in this region, with its long growing season, may extend through April and May and even into June, but are generally completed early in May. The rainfall of May and early June starts the corn and perfects the growth of the wheat crop. The dryer weather of the latter part of June and the early part of July thoroughly ripens the wheat and gives it the high character for soundness and maturity that impart such value to Virginia flour in the markets of warm countries. The wheat harvest generally begins from the 1st to the 15th of June and is completed in about a month. The comparatively dry weather of July and August is favorable for threshing the wheat in the field; it is extremely rare that the grain is ever injured by dampness. The rains of the latter part of August and of early September ripen the Indian corn, which is usually cut and shocked or topped in September and thoroughly cured by the long Indian summer that follows. Corn is shucked at the convenience

of the farmer during the fall and winter, even to March, taking no damage, but on the contrary being rather improved in quality by remaining in the shocks, if they have been well put up. The autumnal rains prepare the ground for the wheat plowing and seeding, which are done from mid August to December.

The prevailing winds of this county are mostly from the south quarters of the horizon, as meteorological records show. High winds are rare and tornadoes are unknown. Clear weather is here the rule, to a remarkable degree, and the proportion of rainy and entirely cloudy days in a year is comparatively small.

VI. Animal and Vegetable Productions.

As the preceding statements indicate, this county is every way well adapted to the growth and full development of all the animal and vegetable productions peculiar to a middle temperate climate. Its condition as a grazing, dairying, and agricultural region is best exhibited by the statistics of its farms and what they produce.

The area of Augusta county is about 1,000 square miles, or 640,000 acres. The United States Census reports from 1850 to 1880 show, approximately, how much of this acreage was embraced in farms, as improved land or land under cultivation, and how much in forest, or as unimproved land, and the total value of its farms, at each census, as follows:

Acres in farms.....	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Improved	178,695	224,544	222,543	246,543
Unimproved	156,981	218,515	187,028	253,028
Totals	334,676	443,059	409,571	499,569
Value of farms.....	\$7,083,273	\$10,997,286	\$10,232,552	\$10,032,579

The figures for 1880 would indicate that all the land of the county, except 140,431 acres, was at that time embraced in farms, and that 393,457 acres, or over 62 per cent of the whole, were unimproved, or still in forest.

By the above figures the average value of the land embraced in farms was \$21 per acre in 1850, \$25 in 1860, \$25 in 1870, and \$20 in 1880. An inspection of the table will show that the average price for 1880 was made so much lower than that for 1870 by including in the farm acreage of 1880 so much more unimproved land than in that for 1870.

The farm statistics of the census of 1880, as given below, show, in acres, the uses to which the lands of this county were put in the year 1879; also the number and value of the farms and their improvements, and the value of their products, etc.:

Number of farms	2,867
Number of acres in farms.....	499,569
Number of acres unimproved	246,543
Number of acres tilled, including fallow and grass in rotation, whether meadow or pasture	232,067
Number of acres in permanent meadows, pastures, orchards and vineyards	14,806
Number of acres unimproved in farms	258,028
Number of acres in woodland and forest	246,228
Other unimproved, including old fields not growing woods, acres	7,800
Value of farms, including lands, fences and buildings.....	\$10,032,579
Value of farming implements and machinery.....	\$22,540
Value of live stock on farms June 1, 1880.....	\$880,516
Cost of building and repairing fences in 1879.....	\$67,718
Cost of fertilizers purchased in 1879.....	\$82,150
Estimated value of all farm products sold, consumed or on hand, for 1879.....	\$1,377,865

The Live Stock statistics of Augusta county for half a century, from 1850 to 1880, are reported in the U. S. census returns as follows:

Census.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Swine	22,445	29,976	31,032	19,211	22,938
Horses	3,580	7,448	8,852	7,283	8,477
Mules and asses.....	85	239	64	64	240
Cows	6,125	6,461	6,232	6,712	7,121
Other cattle.....	41	106	106	106	71
Other cattle.....	21,679	13,628	14,286	11,188	14,867
Sheep	19,689	15,216	12,013	8,211	12,529

In 1840, mules and asses were enumerated with

horses, and there was no separate enumeration of cows and oxen.

Census.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Value of live stock	\$225,361	\$1,287,615	\$1,088,917	\$930,516
Value of animals slaughtered	\$158,501	\$254,888	\$846,800	.....

The Dairy statistics of this county for 40 years are shown in the following table. Considering the slight variation in the number of cows at each census, the changes in the quantities of dairy products is quite remarkable:

Census.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Cows, number	6,196	6,444	6,282	6,712
Butter made, pounds	275,488	461,305	353,335	483,994
Cheese made, pounds	12,094	16,108	2,068	2,186
Milk sold, gallons .....	.....	.....	1,206	8,383

The Wool-growing industry of this county for 50 years shows the following results:

Census.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Sheep, number	19,660	16,316	13,013	8,211	12,510
Wool produced, pounds	30,980	42,004	35,810	23,291	57,468
Average lbs. to a sheep	1.6	2.6	2.7	2.8	4.6

The increase in the quantity of wool produced by each sheep, on an average, as shown above, is very noteworthy.

The Agricultural products of Augusta county.—The following table represents the quantities, in bushels, of the cereals produced in this county in each census year from 1840 to 1880:

Census.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Potatoes, Irish	48,257	24,386	42,766	28,090	33,923
Wheat .....	.....	.....	1,981	498	1,630
Indian Corn	324,882	419,008	397,492	483,278	522,341
Oats	384,408	505,900	752,530	280,340	727,235
Eye	244,869	250,026	191,379	234,492	122,337
Rye	92,227	28,104	57,479	29,885	16,000
Peas and Beans	171	2,942	209	502	.....
Buckwheat	71	1,396	477	516	3,738
Totals	2,879	2,461	7,030	526	1,791
Totals	1,097,168	1,431,863	1,363,066	1,087,822	1,429,542

The product of these cereals in 1880 gave an average of over 40 bushels per capita for the entire population of the county, a quantity large enough to feed eight times the number of its inhabitants.

The other vegetable products of Augusta county at five census-takings, from 1840 to 1880, were as follows:

Census.	1840.	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Clover seed, bushels .....	.....	4,781	8,342	499	2,678
Other grass seeds, bushels .....	.....	667	2,942	808	1,091
Hay, tons	7,963	15,285	21,687	19,671	28,981
Hops, pounds	408	142	875	216	.....
Tobacco, pounds .....	.....	40,727	2,000	.....	1,827
Flax, pounds	34,640	11,771	4,528	4,799	.....
Flax seed, bushels .....	.....	781	408	147	17
Maple sugar, pounds	844	880	586	669	.....
Molasses, gals. .....	.....	28	5,915	28	.....
Sorghum molasses, gals. .....	.....	.....	.....	13,105	11,818
Wine made, gals.	26	165	1,168	2,028	.....
Honey, pounds	2,884	17,116	9,238	13,754	.....
Esserai, pounds	130	.....	848	489	624
Orchard products, value	\$8,838	\$1,790	\$15,229	\$52,706	\$56,653
Forest products, value .....	.....	.....	.....	\$30,129	\$65,468
Wood cut, cords .....	.....	.....	.....	.....	53,279
Market garden produce, value	\$105	\$161	\$890	\$313	\$1,778

The yield of various crops to the acre, and the acreage in each crop, in this county, in 1879, may be learned from the following table of acreage cultivated and crops gathered, as reported in the census of 1880:

Crops.	Acres cultivated.	Total yield.	Yield per acre.
Buckwheat	196	1,791 bush.	9.1
Oats	8,510	122,897 "	14.4
Indian Corn	31,394	727,295 "	23.2
Rye	1,955	16,000 "	7.7
Wheat	44,986	522,841 "	11.7
Barley	182	8,783 "	2.5
Hay	26,895	28,881 tons.	0.9
Tobacco	4	1,827 lbs.	456.8

VII. The People.

The historical facts concerning the people of Augusta county are given in another portion of this volume, so only the statistics of its population will be treated of here.

The earliest account of the number of people in Augusta county probably is that in a "List of tithables" sent by Governor Dinwiddie to the "Lords of Trade" in 1756. In this list Augusta county is credited with 2,273 white tithables, males from 18 years and upward, and with 40 black tithables, males from 16 years and upward. Computing the white tithables as one-fourth of the white population and the black as one-half the black population, as Dinwiddie did, the population of the county then was 9,092 whites and 80 blacks; the whites at that early day formed nearly one-fourth of the entire white population of the colony of Virginia. At the time of this listing Augusta county had its original imperial limits.

In 1780, basing a calculation upon the number of militia, or arms-bearing males, as given in Jefferson's "Notes on Virginia," the population of this county, as at present constituted, was about 5,500 whites and 500 blacks; making a total population in 1780 of about 6,000, or 6 to the square mile.

In 1790, the General government made the first full enumeration of the people, and such an enumeration has been regularly made at the end of each decade from that year. The following table shows the population of this county, by races and aggregates, at each United States census from 1790 to 1880, and the average number of persons to a square mile at each census:

Census.	Whites.	Negroes.	Totals.	No. to sq. m.
1790	9,200	1,636	10,836	10.9
1800	9,671	2,041	11,712	11.7
1810	11,232	3,076	14,308	14.3
1820	12,863	3,779	16,642	16.7
1830	15,257	4,667	19,924	19.9
1840	15,072	4,556	19,628	19.6
1850	18,983	5,637	24,620	24.6
1860	21,547	6,292	27,839	27.8
1870	22,025	5,787	27,812	27.8
1880	25,938	9,310	35,248	35.2

These figures show that the county has had a slow but steady increase in population at each census except that of 1840; this increase has been more rapid since the county was reached by railways between 1850 and 1860. The gain in population from 1850 to 1860 was 12 per cent; from 1860 to 1870, the decade of the civil war, during which this county was the scene of active operations, the gain was but 3½ per cent; while from 1870 to 1880 it was over 12 per cent. The next census will show a still larger ratio of increase.

The large increase in the negro population between 1870 and 1880 was in consequence of the large demand for labor created by the construction of new railways, the opening of mines, and the general development of the county.

It is proper to add that this county has furnished, from the date of its settlement, large numbers of emigrants to all the westward country; the high-ways of travel to the west have always led through it, and its sons, vigorous scions of a hardy and enterprising stock, have always been among the leading pioneers in the westward march of population.

The average density of the population of this county in 1880 was about the same as that of the states of Tennessee and Vermont. The population of the state of New York was three times as dense, that of Massachusetts six times, and that of Rhode Island eight times.—If there had been as many people to a square mile as there were in Rhode Island, this county would have contained 272,000 people in 1880.

The negro population of this county, as previously stated, was about eighty in 1756 and about

500 in 1780. The numbers and condition of this race at each United States census are shown in the following table:

Census.	Free.	Slave.	Census.	Free.	Slave.
1790	59	1,567	1840	421	4,135
1800	95	1,946	1850	574	5,093
1810	196	2,860	1860	586	5,616
1820	267	3,512	1870	6,737	.....
1830	404	4,265	1880	9,310	.....

The table preceding the above shows that the negro population of this county was very nearly stationary, or increasing but moderately, until between 1870 and 1880. In 1860, most of them slaves, they were a little over 22 per cent of the population; in 1870, when all free, they made about 23 per cent, and in 1880 they were about 26 per cent of the whole population. Many negroes migrated to this county from the less prosperous ones to the eastward after the close of the late civil war, so the increase of 1880 was not a natural and normal one.

The population of Augusta county in 1880, by sex and by school, military, and voting ages, was as follows:

All Ages.	5 to 17.	18 to 44.	21+
Males	5,390	6,270	8,215
Females	5,558	.....	.....
Totals	11,088	6,270	8,215

The school age, 5 to 17, includes both ages named, so also does the military age, 18 to 44. The voting age, 21, is 21 years and over.—Those of school age form nearly one-third of the population, those of military age nearly one-sixth, and the males of voting age over one-fourth.

The nativity of the people of Augusta county in 1870 and 1880, was as follows:

	1870.	1880.
Natives of the United States	28,376	85,205
Foreign-born	387	505

The following table shows where the people living in this county in 1880 were born:

Virginia	33,976	British America	19
North Carolina	76	England and Wales	108
Maryland	289	Ireland	227
Pennsylvania	176	Scotland	12
New York	94	German Empire	94
Tennessee	82	France	10
Kentucky	84	Italy	1
District of Columbia	23	Switzerland	6
West Virginia	182	.....	.....
New Jersey	6	Total Foreign-born	505
Total Natives	35,205	.....	.....

The above tables show that in 1880 nearly 93 per cent of the people of this county were born in Virginia, and that the handsome increase of its population between 1870 and 1880, notwithstanding the enormous drains of the war of 1860-65, was a natural and local increase, one indicating, very forcibly, the native vigor of its people.

The total population of each of the seven civil divisions of the county, the city of Staunton and six Magisterial districts, in 1870 and 1880, is shown in the following table:

	1870.	1880.
1. Staunton city	5,120	6,564
2. Beverley Manor district	2,961	5,362
3. Middle River "	4,376	5,549
4. North River "	4,168	4,818
5. The Pastures "	3,292	5,991
6. Riverheads "	4,280	5,757
7. South River "	4,481	5,074

South River district includes the town of Waynesboro, which had a population of 536 in 1870, and of 484 in 1880.

BIOGRAPHICAL.*

CYRUS HALL McEORMICK was born at Walnut Grove farm, Rockbridge county, Virginia, February 15, 1809. His home and early surroundings on the farm were like those of the well-to-do people of the Valley of Virginia. His parents, Robert and Mary Ann Hall McCormick, were of Scotch-Irish descent, of superior intelligence and strength of character, whose thrift and industry had placed them in comfortable circumstances, and so Cyrus, like the rest of his brothers and sisters, received a good English education.

Early taught at home that the fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom, he grew up into such habits of industry, obedience and strict morality as shaped his future life and character, and made him capable of the great things he afterward accomplished.

His father, being an extensive farmer, and at a great distance from any workshop, had of necessity supplied himself with carpenter and blacksmith shops, and the means of making and repairing most of the tools and farming implements of that time.

Many a long day was spent by the boy Cyrus in these blacksmith and carpenter shops on the homestead, tinkering with plows, harrows, etc., thus making himself not only familiar with the use of farm machinery, but becoming expert in the use of tools, and in devising methods of overcoming mechanical difficulties, little dreaming that this was the seed time of his life, in which those germs of mechanical invention took root, which afterward blossomed out into a glorious fruitage. He soon developed such an aptitude for tools, and a dexterity in using them, that when only fifteen years old, he constructed a grain cradle for his own use in the harvest field, being ambitious to do his full share of the work alongside the most expert cradler, and over many a broad acre of grain on the old Virginia farm did he swing this primitive harvester of his boyhood, as the forerunner of the great harvester which was to come.

His first invention was a hillside plow, patented in 1831, for throwing alternate furrows on the lower side being thus a right or left hand plow at will. Two years later he invented a superior horizontal self-sharpening plow, which was pronounced a great success. These were but stepping stones, however, to the great work that has made his name famous throughout the world.

His father, Robert McCormick, who was a genius in the construction of several machines for threshing, hempbreaking, etc., had in the year 1816 devised a reaping machine, but it was not by any means a success, and after repeated efforts he abandoned it, convinced that it could not succeed.

Time rolled on, and the old reaper lay near the workshop, condemned and abandoned as a relic of

disappointed hopes, but it was daily under the eye of the young man Cyrus as an unsolved problem, a feat attempted, but unaccomplished.

The problem of cutting grain by machinery absorbed his thoughts day and night in that quiet old home. His father believed nothing could come from pursuing his idea, and he discouraged what he thought was only a waste of time. Mr. McCormick was satisfied that if he would succeed, he must proceed on a wholly different plan of construction from his father's. The old machine therefore served but as an inspiration in the work, without affording any foundation to build upon. He soon became convinced, first, that grain stand-

his character, which never failed him, and here they triumphed.

With his own hands he made and fashioned every piece of the machine, both wood and iron, in his father's workshop, which is still standing on the old homestead.

At length it was finished and put at work in the harvest of 1831, in cutting a piece of six acres of oats on the farm of one John Steele, a neighbor. It proved a success to the astonishment of all who witnessed its trial, but neither the inventor nor the spectators had any idea of the value of the work that day begun, a work that was destined to revolutionize agriculture throughout the world, and in our own country to turn the wild prairies of the West into fruitful grain fields, so marvelously increasing the production of grain as to tax the powers of transportation, and stimulate in the United States the construction of a greater network of railroads than in all the world beside, enriching the world, lessening the severity of toil, and making it possible to feed the whole human family on the finest of the wheat.

That the inventor himself did not grasp at first the full value of his invention is evident from the fact that about this time he was induced from the sudden impulse given to the iron interest to engage with another in the iron smelting business, and in doing so the reaper was for a time overlooked. This new business, however, in the financial panic of 1837, proved disastrous, and, like many other enterprises at that time, ended in ruin. This misfortune was shared by his father's whole family, who united in their efforts, and by mutual industry, good management, and unflinching fidelity, at length extricated themselves, though at the sacrifice, on the part of Cyrus, of everything but honor and integrity.

Disappointed at his reverses, but never discouraged, he now turned his attention once more to the reaping machine, and with all the ardor of youth, centered all his energies upon it, determined, if he had failed in the iron business, he would not fail here.

But few machines could be expected to be sold in those early days, for farming was limited in extent to a few eastern states. His earliest efforts at manufacturing were to make a few machines by hand on the farm, and sell them as best he could. In this way he worked along for a few years under the protection of his first patent, which was issued to him in 1834.

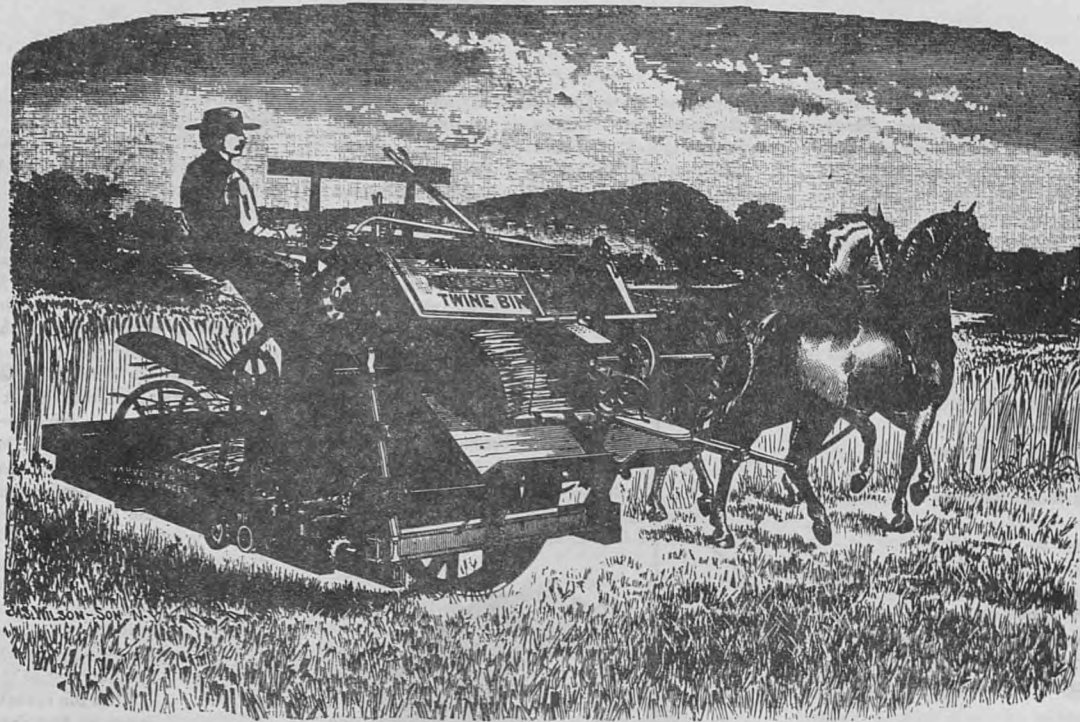
He began soon to realize, however, that the young west was the field where he could hope to accomplish anything worth while, and so in 1845 he removed to the then western city of Cincinnati for the purpose of extending more widely the sale of the new reaper, for it began to be well known by this time that a machine had been invented to cut grain by horse-power. Here several hundred



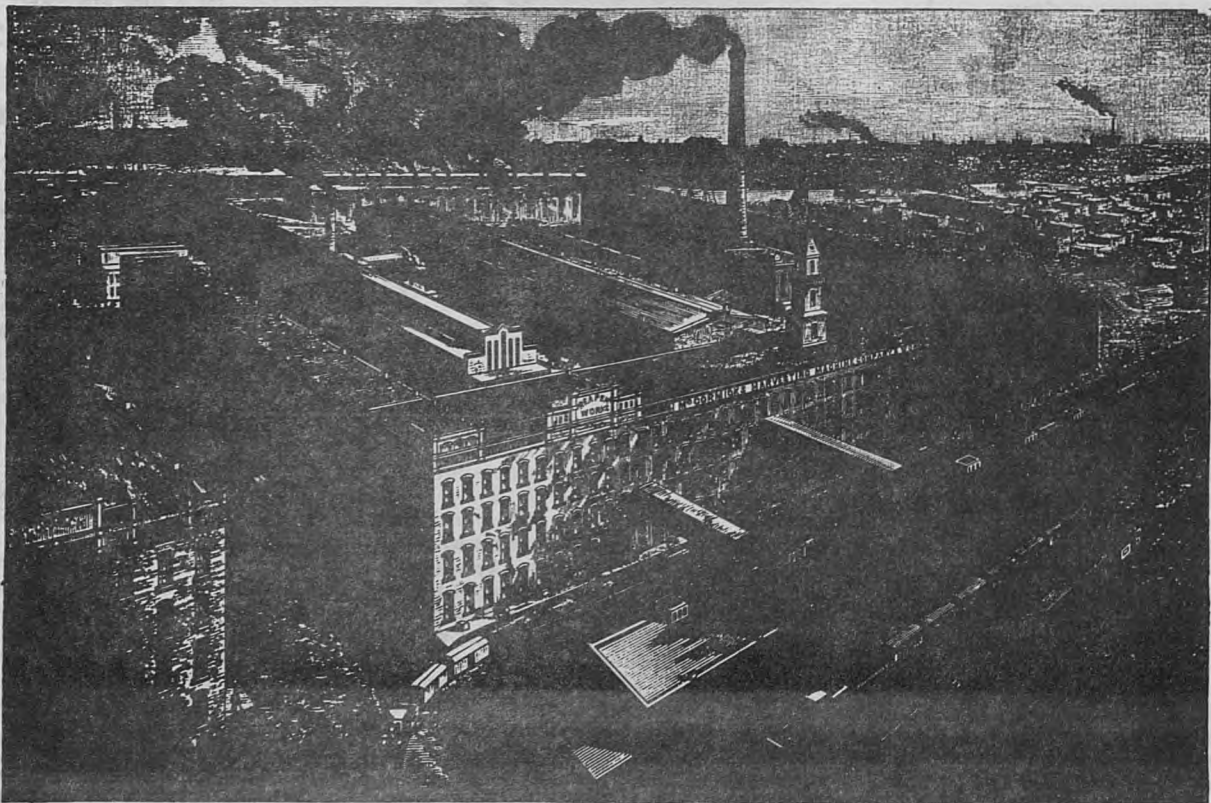
C. H. McCormick

ing in the field must be acted on in a mass; second, that the cutting must be done by an edged instrument having a rapid reciprocating motion to make it effective as it advanced. As these ideas matured in his mind, he began, in a crude way at first, to mentally outline the salient points of the great invention, the sickle to cut, the platform to receive the falling grain when cut, and the reel to bring the standing grain within the action of the cutting edge. To combine all these and the other necessary features into a machine with the proper relation of parts, and requisite speed of each part, taxed his inventive ingenuity to the utmost, but patience and perseverance were inborn traits in

*Compiled by the Publishers.



McCORMICK'S HARVESTER AND TWINE BINDER.



McCORMICK HARVESTING MACHINE COMPANY'S WORKS, CHICAGO, ILLINOIS.

machines were built and sold in the southern borders of Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois, some of them going over into Kentucky, Missouri, and Tennessee. The next year he arranged with a firm in Brockport, New York, to build the machine on a royalty, and thus introduce it into use in more northern sections.

While this initial work was going on of introducing the reaping machine, it should be borne in mind that many of the great states and territories beyond the Mississippi, where now the harvesting machine is most extensively sold, were then one unbroken wilderness.

Mr. McCormick procured additional patents for valuable improvements in 1845 and 1847, and still kept up the work of experimenting and improving year by year, a work indeed he continued during his lifetime, never seeming satisfied with present attainments, but ever pressing onward for something higher and better.

The Great West by this time began to open up its wonderful resources, and Mr. McCormick soon realized that Chicago, and not Cincinnati, was destined to be its metropolis, and thither he removed in 1847. On his arrival he speedily perfected arrangements whereby he was enabled to erect works and to manufacture seven hundred machines in 1848, and so successful was the new business that the next year the manufacture was increased to fifteen hundred machines.

In those early days this was a gigantic undertaking, considering the novelty of the enterprise, the absence of the modern wood and iron working machinery, and the limited means of transportation through the west; for not a mile of the present superb railway system of the west was then in existence, and the slow going canal boat was the only means of transporting machines from Chicago to the interior river towns, and from thence the farmer had often to wagon them fifty to seventy-five miles to his home.

It required more nerve and brain, and superior judgment, and good business tact, to inaugurate and build up business in those early days, surrounded by so many discouraging obstacles, than to carry it on now, when over fifty thousand machines per annum are built and sold.

After the success of the machine was made an assured fact, Mr. McCormick spent much of his time abroad, bringing his machine to the notice of European agriculturists. In 1851 he attended the first World's Fair in London. During the early days of the exposition his reaper in the American department was the subject of much ridicule. The London "Times" alluded to it as something like "a cross between an Astley chariot, a wheelbarrow, and a flying machine." But a few weeks later, when this despised Yankee invention, as it was called, was put at work in the English grain fields, ridicule was turned into admiration and widespread enthusiasm. After prolonged tests, when the great council medal was awarded its inventor, on the ground of "the originality and value of his American reaper," the same journal made haste to correct its errors, and frankly admitted that the reaper was equal in value to the cost of the entire exhibition. The public press throughout both Europe and America now echoed the praises of him who had invented and brought into public use a machine which has done as much for the amelioration of the condition of mankind, as the railroad, the printing-press, or the electric telegraph. The following is a specimen of the enthusiasm with which the press everywhere noted this great event.

Correspondence of the "Journal of Commerce," London, August 29, 1851.

Among all the agricultural implements exhibited in the great exhibition, and their number and variety are very great, the great medal has been awarded to one,

and that of American invention, it is Mr. McCormick's Virginia Reaper. At an early period after the opening of the exhibition, it was made an especial subject of sneers in the newspapers, as one of the awkward and outlandish trape from the United States. It has been thoroughly tested on different farms and now attracts perhaps more attention than any other object in the exhibition. The Kohinoor is voted below contempt by the side of the Virginia Reaper. You doubtless have seen the hearty commendation of it in the "Times." Some English gentlemen of great mark have expressed to me the opinion that it is the most valuable and important contribution made to England by the exhibition.

At subsequent international expositions, such as at Paris in 1855, London 1862, Hamburg 1863, Paris 1867, Vienna 1873, Philadelphia 1876 (Centennial), Paris 1878, Royal Agricultural Society, England, 1878; Melbourne 1880, Royal Agricultural Society, England, 1881, Christchurch, New Zealand, 1882, Grosseto, Italy, 1883, and Louisville exposition, 1883 and 1884, he was equally triumphant in securing the highest prizes.

In addition to these high honors often won in opposition to all the contending machines of Europe and America, Mr. McCormick was decorated with the cross of the Legion of Honor at Paris in 1867, and at the succeeding exposition of 1878 further honored with the decoration of Officer of the Legion of Honor; and was elected a member of the Academy of Sciences in the department of rural economy as "having done more for the cause of agriculture than any other living man."

In 1858 Mr. McCormick married a daughter of Melzar Fowler, and niece of Judge E. G. Merrick, of Detroit, a beautiful, accomplished, and refined lady, whose gentleness, charity, and good deeds have shed lustre on the position she occupies. This happy union was blessed with a family of three daughters and four sons. Two of the children died in infancy. The eldest son, Cyrus H. McCormick, Jr., has since his father's death been elected president of the McCormick Harvesting Machine Company.

Mr. McCormick was a Presbyterian, and his Christianity took a practical turn during his life. His benevolence sought the higher levels, and his generosity expressed itself in the forms which benefit communities and society at large, and whose influence will be lasting on the ages to come. He did good and loved to do good, but he did it wisely, judiciously and generously.

The Presbyterian Theological Seminary of the Northwest owes its existence to him, as he donated one hundred thousand dollars to have it located at Chicago, and continued during all its struggles in after years to supply its empty treasury with funds as its necessities demanded, until the original donation was increased nearly fourfold. His beneficence toward this institution has placed it in the front rank as one of the leading seminaries, whose influence on the cause of Christianity will be felt for all time.

In his native state, which he dearly loved, he gave twenty thousand dollars to Washington and Lee University, and endowed a professorship in Union Theological Seminary with thirty thousand dollars. Nor did his beneficence end with these gifts, for many a struggling church and college throughout the country has experienced new life and energy through his timely assistance. His was a busy life of many sided industry. In the city of his adoption he erected many of its most costly and ornate business blocks, and when the great fire of 1871 laid all in ashes, he was among the first to spring forward with plans and means for rebuilding on a still grander scale.

Unconquerable will-power to a remarkable degree was possessed by him, and a determination to pursue his plans no matter what obstacle might for a time block his pathway. This trait was

peculiarly exemplified when, in 1871, his great reaper works, with every vestige of machinery and patterns, were destroyed, he was advised by friends to retire from active business at his advanced age in life, he having then accumulated a large fortune, but his reply indicated the fixed purpose of the man of iron nerve; said he, "I know of no better place for a man to die than in the harness," and so he rebuilt the reaper works on a grander scale than ever, and lived to see their capacity multiplied tenfold.

In 1878, while in Paris, he suffered acutely from a carbuncle on his neck, and after undergoing a painful operation in its removal, he returned home much enfeebled in health, but subsequently rallied for a period under the power of a vigorous constitution. Rheumatic affections soon began to seriously interfere with his much loved exercise on horseback, and after a few years his enforced sedentary habits began to tell on his general health. After a brief illness he died at his home May 13, 1884, having completed the seventy-fifth year of his life. Up to his death, though a confirmed invalid, his mental powers continued in full play and vigor, and the energy, foresight, and comprehensive grasp with which he disposed of all the knotty business problems incident to such an extended business as he presided over, was remarkable for one in his physical condition.

In the death of Mr. Cyrus Hall McCormick, America lost a grandly representative citizen, and the world one of its greatest benefactors. Unpretending man as he was, he had been the guest of kings and emperors. He lived a life of the highest order of nobility, himself a king without a crown. His were the victories of peace. To his fertile brain the world stands indebted for one of the most valuable of labor-saving machines; to his industry, generosity and enterprise the city of Chicago, and the religious denomination to which he belonged, owes a debt of gratitude which money is powerless to liquidate. Mr. McCormick was in every respect a typical American. He was also a natural inventor, and, unlike most inventors, he was a good business man, possessing a spirit of restless energy and enterprise that faced every obstacle and yielded to no antagonism.

The works of such a man, founded on industry, determination, honesty and Christian faith, shall live through all time, and are his best monument, and through them "he being dead yet speaketh."

THE ACHIEVEMENTS AND RESOURCES OF THE M'CORMICK REAPER WORKS.

Inventions which have resulted in great industries and the development of great natural resources will always be subjects of deep interest to the student of history and political economy. The cotton gin rendered available the vast agricultural resources of the southern states, and the correspondingly great cotton manufacturing interests of England and New England. The reaper did as much for northern agriculture.

America is the birthplace and home of the reaping machine. Here it was invented by the late Cyrus Hall McCormick, and first successfully introduced; here its greatest achievements have been won, and here it has proved itself one of the factors in transforming a continent from a state of primitive solitude to be the home of fifty million enterprising people engaged in all the arts and manufactures of civilization.

When we look back fifty years and remember that the reaping-hook and grain cradle were the only means the farmer then had of securing his crop, we are led to wonder how many centuries must have elapsed before the land west of the Alleghenies could have been settled as it is today, not only to the Mississippi, but from ocean to ocean. The reaping machine has not only made

this possible, but has made farming profitable on a scale never dreamed of before. In Minnesota and Dakota there are grain farms of from ten to thirty thousand acres, whose princely owners purchase and operate reaping machines by the score and by the hundred.

The works of the McCormick Harvesting Machine Company, a view of which we have represented elsewhere, are situated in the southwestern portion of the City of Chicago, upon the bank of the river, and at a point where all the vast network of Chicago railroads center, and occupy an area of twenty-four acres of ground.

The buildings occupied as factories are four stories high, and 565×740 feet in extent, situated on the corner of Blue Island and Western avenues. Illustrations of them are given on another page.

They are arranged with an especial view to the convenience and healthful comfort of the workmen as well as for the advantageous management of this vast industry. Of this large space ten rooms, 60×100 feet, are devoted to the woodworking department, and filled with all the most improved machinery in that branch. The foundry is 245×90 feet in size, and is a handsome structure. Here fifty tons of iron are daily transformed into the various castings used in the construction of the various machines. Twelve rooms, 60×100 feet large, are used for the purpose of painting and ornamenting, and a large space is set aside for packing. But the center of absorbing interest and attraction is the enormous machine-shops, equipped with their multitude of peculiar and ingenious machines. Looking down the long aisles lined with curious and marvelous machinery, one is amazed at the majesty and flash of motion, the busy play of wheel and lever, the ceaseless whirr and buzz. It is a labyrinth of action, and a tumult of sounds more vivid, more sonorous than the roar of conflict, yet bearing in its swelling tide only the burdens of joyful and plenteous peace. In the management of this vast business an army of men as great as that which followed Napoleon to the sea and stamped their names upon immortal history, is employed, an army as great in numbers and immeasurably greater in the nobility of its achievements. The weekly pay-roll of this great institution amounts to many thousand dollars, and carries bread and blessings into many homes. The immensity of the business is almost inconceivable, and yet, immense as it is, the company finds itself under the necessity of materially enlarging its manufacturing facilities during the coming season to meet the increasing demand for its productions. The harvesters are busy in the fields of every nation and people of the world, and their excellence has been attested by the first honors in the awards of every industrial exposition for the past thirty-five years. The McCormick harvesters are as familiar to the peasants of Russia and the Black sea lands, Australia, New Zealand, France, Africa, Italy and Germany, as to the farmers of the Mississippi valley. Nearly a half million McCormick machines have been built and sold since 1849, in which year but fifteen hundred were constructed. In 1884 over fifty-five thousand machines were made and sold, and what the future of the business will be, as the vast west develops, is beyond comprehension.

In view of these wonderful achievements of the McCormick reaping machines, how prophetic now seem the utterances of eminent American statesmen regarding it some years ago. In 1859 the late Hon. Reverdy Johnson in an argument before the commissioner of patents said that "the McCormick reaper had already contributed an annual income to the whole country of over fifty-five million dollars at least, which must increase through all time."

The late Hon. William H. Seward, in speaking

of the same matter, remarked that "owing to Mr. McCormick's invention, the line of civilization moves westward thirty miles each year."

These prophecies have been more than realized, and undoubtedly this *avant-courier* of civilization will continue its march onward, conquering and to conquer, as it has in the past, until every available acre of this great continent shall be reclaimed, and made to bloom as the garden of the Lord.

REV. JOHN HENDREN, D.D.

Rev. John Hendren, D.D. was the son of Samuel Hendren and Ann Lowry; he was born in County Down, Ireland, December, 1783—the exact day is not given.

Of the few particulars known of his ancestors, these facts are prominent; that they were remarkable for possessing good sense, and were eminent for godliness. His parents had four children, viz.: Betsy, Ann, Edward and John, the subject of this sketch. Edward died in his childhood in his native land. When John was about twelve years old the family moved to the United States, and came to Rockbridge county, Virginia, and made their home in the town of Lexington. His parents were Presbyterians, and here he grew up under their tender, careful Christian training. They valued intellectual cultivation, and though their pecuniary resources were not large, they gave him the best education attainable.

His talents were of a high order, and being studious, he became a thorough scholar, graduating in Washington College, near his home, the same institution which in after years conferred on him the degree of D.D., now Washington and Lee University.

He had taken into consideration the profession of both law and medicine. Before reaching manhood he made a public profession of religion, and after this his mind turned towards the Gospel ministry. He was licensed to preach, in 1807, by Lexington Presbytery.

While pursuing the study of theology, he taught a classical school for one year in Petersburg, Virginia, and afterwards in New Glasgow, Amherst county. In this county he began his ministry; first as a missionary in it and adjoining counties until 1810. A church was organized at Amherst Court House, which at the same time presented him a call to become its pastor, which he did, yet continued his school, and as far as practicable, his missionary labors. While a resident in Amherst, he married Miss Elizabeth Eldridge Rivers, late from Greenville county, in the southeastern part of Virginia. She was lovely in person and character, and as long as she lived was to him his great stay and helper. They had ten children; the eldest born died in infancy.

In 1817 he accepted a joint call from Mossy Creek and Union churches, in Augusta county; the latter, just organized, and about ten miles distant from the first. When he began to preach in these regions, the influence of religious teaching and example was limited to a comparatively small sphere. There was much thoughtless, reckless living, and sabbath breaking. But his preaching, his exemplary life and many labors in the cause of truth and righteousness, with his courageous, unflinching integrity, under all circumstances and trials gained, in the course of years, a deep, permanent and widespread influence for the cause of God.

In him the power of God's spirit could not be denied; the force of his example accompanied his teaching. And it became the sentiment, far and wide, in the county and out of it, "that if Dr. Hendren said or did a thing it was surely right."

He spent his fall and spring vacations, of a month each, in preaching in other parts of the country, or in some special work for the spread of

the Gospel. It seems almost incredible that he could do so much and do it well; still, it is true, that nothing which he undertook was slightly done.

As a pastor he was faithful in "teaching and exhorting with all long-suffering;" he visited the sick, and was a comforter to the afflicted; his heart was tender and sympathizing, so much so, that he took the troubles of others to his own heart. Like the Master, having loved his people, he loved them to the end.

As a teacher he commanded the respect of his pupils, by his dignity and the purity and force of his character. They feared and loved him. If there was an exceptional one who did not feel an affection for him, that one was, at least, constrained to respect him. There were few of these that he did not succeed in leading to become, in some degree, students; this he conscientiously labored to effect in each case. Very many he prepared for college, many for business, and some for the Gospel ministry, by giving tuition or board in whole or in part. His pupils may be found scattered in Virginia, and probably in most of the southern and western states.

In 1835 he resigned the pastoral charge of Mossy Creek, and removed his residence to the neighborhood of Union, of which church he continued pastor until his death. His health being much worn down by an arduous life, he was induced by his family to resign his school some years before that event. It was the main source of support for himself and family, and being an unusually good financier, it enabled him to possess a farm as a home for himself and them. It so happened that he was never the receiver of gratuitous assistance from his fellow men, but he was himself a benefactor to many in a variety of ways.

His affection for his family was entwined around every fibre of his sensitive, finely strung nature; he was alike susceptible of exquisite enjoyment and exquisite suffering.

The death of his wife was a sore bereavement; a month previous to this, Susan Emma, a darling little daughter, was taken away, and a few years succeeding occurred the death of a dear little son, Eldridge Rivers. And again, after the lapse of a year or two, a young married daughter, Mrs. S. Jane Stephens, wife of the late Dr. John R. Stephens, was removed by death. Of her, her father wrote: "A most affectionate daughter, and I trust, a sincere child of God."

She left two little daughters, whom he took to his home, and raised with his remaining children. His second wife was Miss Mildred Reed Thompson, a lady of many excellencies of head and of heart; of her he was also bereaved. He survived her about five years.

In friendship he was always to be relied on, and was never swerved from it by an evil surmise or report, propagated against one for whom he had entertained a good opinion.

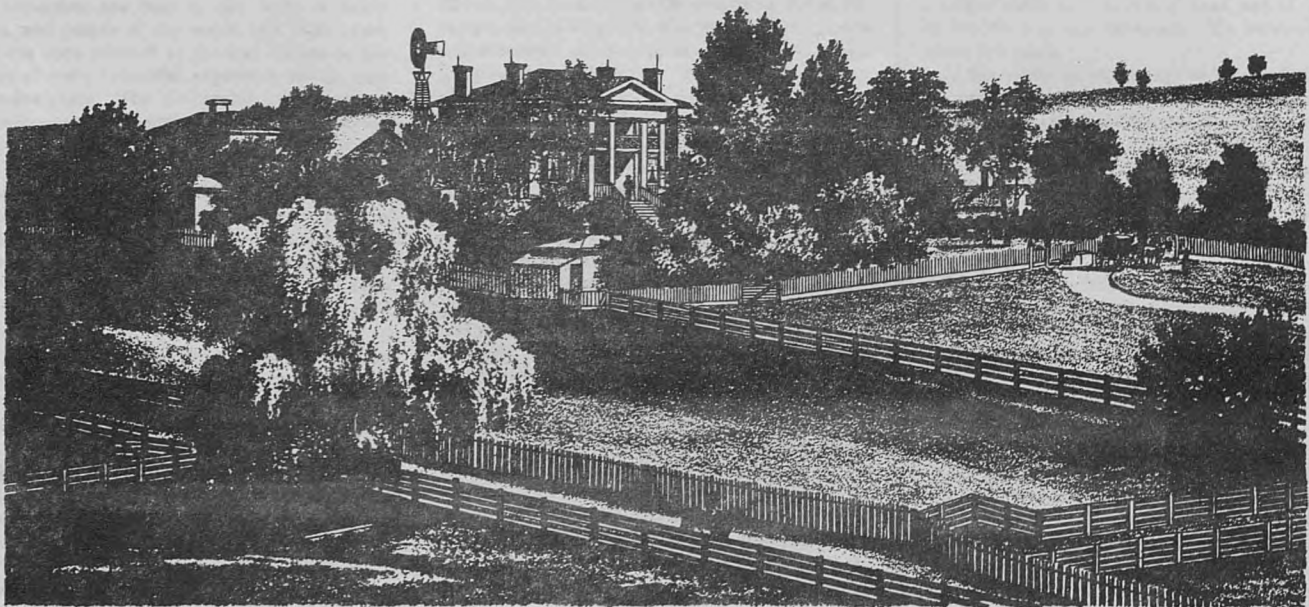
If a friend did fall he did not forsake him, but manifested his faithfulness in endeavoring to lift him up; if any were false to his trust, revenge found no place in his heart, but the painful wound it made left a scar.

Letters to him from acquaintances, from those who had lived under his ministry and from those who had been his pupils, all give evidence that his influence for good was not diminished by distance or lapse of time; and is likely to descend from generation to generation, perhaps, to the end of time.

As may have been inferred, he was a man of much prayer, remarkably so; and as lay on his bed in his protracted illness, the breathings of his soul went up in prayer for his children, for the people of his church, for the people of God everywhere, and for a world of sinners. His death took place October 12, 1856. Six children survived him. One son, Dr. Samuel R. Hendren, has since joined his



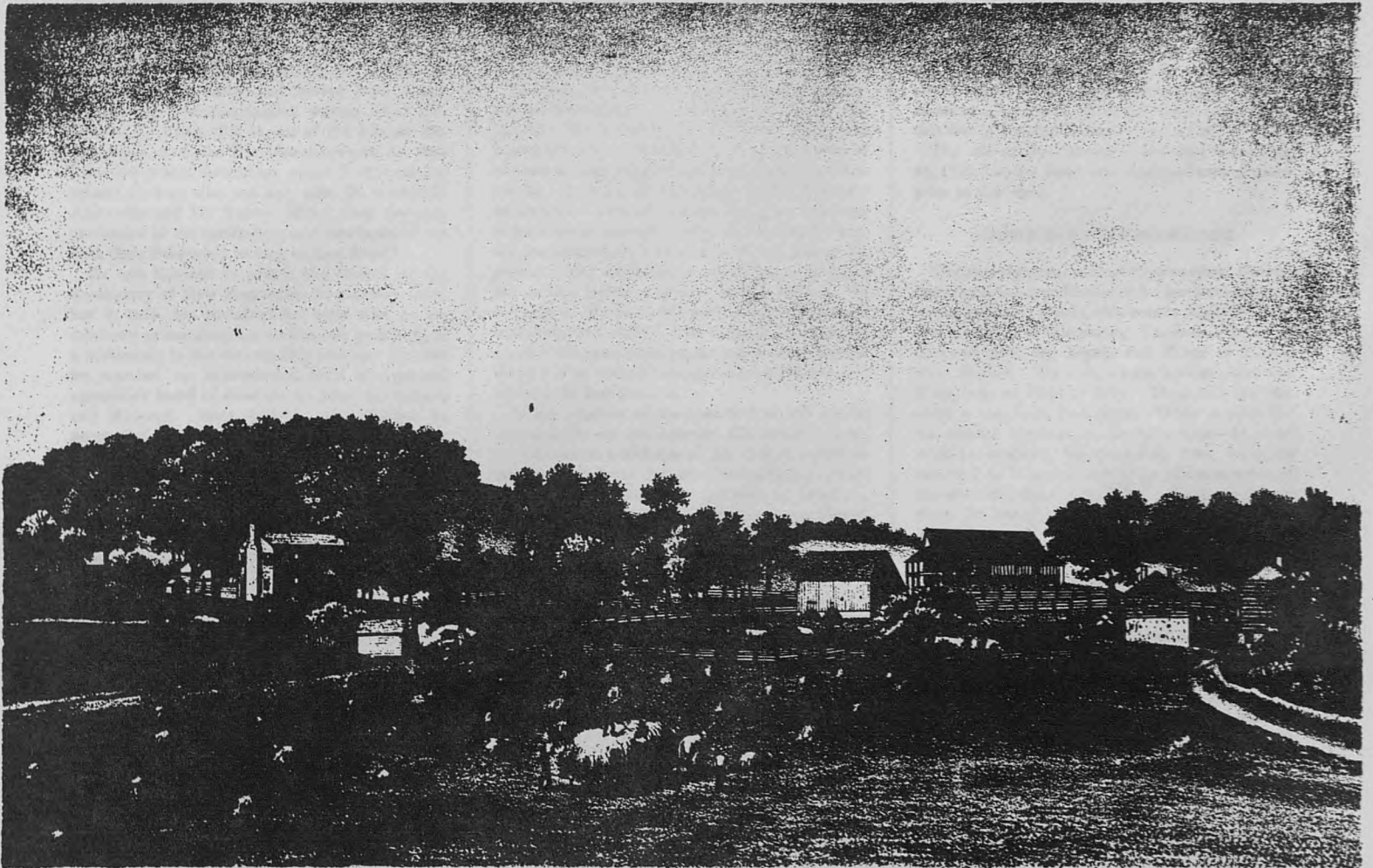
"CEDAR HILL," RESIDENCE OF THE LATE REV. JOHN HENDREN, D. D., NORTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



"SELMA," RESIDENCE OF JUDGE JOHN N. HENDREN, STAUNTON, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



J. Henderson



"WALNUT GROVE." - HOMESTEAD OF THE M^{RS} CORMICK FAMILY, ROCKBRIDGE CO., VA.

loved father in the heavenly land. He was in the prime of life, a fine looking, handsome man, of uncommon mental ability, and more than all this, an humble Christian for several years previous to his death.

Dr. Pancoast, of Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, Pa., said, on the occasion of his death, that "the death of such a man was a public calamity."

The eldest and only remaining son of Dr. Hendren, Judge J. N. Hendren, with his family, resides near Staunton.

Rev. R. C. Walker, son-in-law of Dr. Hendren, with his wife and three single daughters of Dr. Hendren still occupy his late residence.

This is a brief statement of facts given as a tribute to the memory of one of the most valuable of men, and a testimony to the power of divine grace manifested in him.

REV. FRANCIS McFARLAND, D.D.*

This venerable and eminent minister of the Gospel departed this life early on the morning of October 10, 1871, in the eighty-fourth year of his age. Dr. McFarland was born January 8, 1788, in the County of Tyrone, province of Ulster, in the north part of Ireland. His parents, who were members of the Presbyterian church, emigrated to the United States in 1793, and settled in western Pennsylvania. His pastor was that excellent man, the Rev. Eliaba McCurdy, D.D., whose memory is still precious in the whole region in which he lived. His collegiate education was at Jefferson and Washington colleges, from the latter of which he received the degree of A.B., in 1818, and subsequently the degrees of A.M. and D.D. In the spring of 1818 he entered the theological seminary at Princeton, where among his fellow-students and intimate friends—and some of them, at least, his classmates—were Drs. Charles Hodge, William B. Sprague, Joseph Smith and Bishop John Johns. He says, in a communication written about two years ago, "I regard it as one of the kindest dispensations of divine Providence towards me that I was led to that institution, where I enjoyed the esteem of those wise and holy men, Dr. Archibald Alexander and Dr. Samuel Miller, then the only professors in the institution, and who honored me with their friendship as long as they lived."

He was licensed to preach the Gospel by the Presbytery of New Brunswick, New Jersey, October 8, 1819, but remained for some time in the seminary prosecuting his studies and preaching as a missionary in the surrounding country. In 1820 he received an appointment from the general assembly's board of missions to labor in Indiana and Missouri. After fulfilling this mission he spent five months in Georgia as a missionary under the Synod of South Carolina and Georgia. In the summer of 1822 he spent three months preaching to the First Presbyterian church, Brooklyn, New York, then recently organized. While laboring there he was (August 1, 1822) ordained, *sine titulo*, by the Presbytery of New Brunswick, which at that time met in the Presbyterian church in Princeton. The Rev. Dr. John Woodhull, then in the seventy-ninth year of his age, preached the sermon, and Rev. Dr. Miller delivered the charge.

In the fall of that year he had a severe attack of typhus fever, accompanied with hemorrhage from the lungs, in consequence of which, as soon as partially recovered, he was advised by his physicians to travel to the South on horseback. Upon reaching Staunton, Virginia (where he was the guest of that noble Christian gentleman and eminent physician, Dr. Addison Waddell, for whom

he ever cherished the warmest regard), it was found that his health had been greatly improved. The church of Bethel, about ten miles south of Staunton, being at that time vacant by the removal of the Rev. Dr. Chapman, Mr. McFarland was invited to preach there. After supplying the pulpit for three sabbaths he returned to Pennsylvania, where he soon after received a unanimous call from that congregation to become their pastor. This call he accepted, and in the year following was duly installed, the Rev. Dr. Ruffner, of Lexington, preaching the sermon, and Rev. Dr. Speece, of Augusta church, delivering the charge.

In the winter of 1835 he was elected corresponding secretary of the board of education, which important office he felt it his duty to accept. The pastoral relation was dissolved in January, 1836, and on March 1, he entered upon the duties of his office in Philadelphia, in the faithful performance of which he continued till August 1, 1841. It may as well be stated here that, although it was a period of very great financial trouble, and in which the great church controversies were in progress, which culminated in the rupture of 1838, the service of Dr. McFarland was highly useful, and upon his resignation the board of education adopted a paper expressing their great appreciation of him personally and officially.

The church of Bethel had just become vacant by the removal of its pastor, the Rev. A. B. McCorkle, to Georgia, and by a unanimous vote of the congregation the old pastor was again invited to settle among them. He had not contemplated retiring from the work in Philadelphia quite so soon, but the prospect of returning to his old home, and among associations in Virginia so congenial, was decisive. A small farm was purchased, which his practical turn soon shaped into a very comfortable home for his family, and there the good man dwelt till called to "the house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."

He was a well read theologian, averse to speculations, but inquisitive and fond of friendly discussion. His preaching, when in his prime, was highly attractive, and often with great power of manner as well as of thought, especially in illustration. In pastoral intercourse he could hardly be excelled. Friendly, sympathizing and familiar in his manner (though always the dignified Christian gentleman), he was ever welcome among his people. His admirable practical sense qualified him to be a judicious adviser on any subject. In sickness or affliction who could minister with more tenderness and skill? The unusual fact that he was invited unanimously a second time to become the pastor of Bethel indicates the confidence and affection he had inspired.

In the councils of the church it would not be easy to point out his superior. His eminent piety, the uncommon soundness of his judgment, his remarkable prudence and conciliatory spirit, though none more inflexibly firm and true to principle, gave his opinions great weight, from the church session to the general assembly. To this last judicatory he was more frequently sent than any other member of Lexington presbytery, and in the assembly of 1856, having been chosen as the moderator, he presided over its deliberations with a dignity and skill not only satisfactory to all, but which excited general admiration.

Rev. F. McFarland was united in marriage to Mary A. Bent, of Winchester, Virginia, who was born in 1800. This union was blessed with eight children, viz.: Betsey, Mary, Francis William, Francis William, Robert P., Lemuel B., James N. and Mary. James N. McFarland was born February 24, 1842. In 1874 he was married to Mary E., daughter of William and Mary E. (Shields) Wallace. She was born December 2, 1847. The issue of this union is two children, Francis P. and Wal-

lace B. In May, 1883, Mr. McFarland was elected treasurer of Augusta county on the democratic ticket, and is at present conducting the affairs of this office. He is in possession of the old homestead of one hundred and thirty acres, to which he has added one hundred acres more, thus making a fine farm. An illustration of his residence can be found on another page.

FRANCIS BROWN AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

It is very much regretted by the now living descendants of Francis Brown that so much of his history should have been unwritten, and thus perished. The following is all that can be called authentic.

Francis Brown and his wife emigrated from the north of Ireland, it is supposed, about the year 1738 or 1739, and settled between the north and south branches of Naked creek, in the north-western part of Augusta county, Va., on the land now owned by his descendants.

It is not known whether he accepted any office of honor or trust during his life; he passed all his days and died there, leaving but one son, Hugh Brown, who was born June 21, 1745. He lived on the same place. During the revolutionary war he was called to the office of lieutenant, and was in a battle at Jamestown, Va. When all seemed to be lost he was asked what was to be done? His reply was characteristic of the man: "Fight," said he; "fight to the last extremity." After the war he returned to the peaceable pursuits of agriculture. In the latter part of his life he had one of his legs amputated. He died September 23, 1816, leaving one son and two daughters.

Francis Brown, son of the above, Hugh Brown, lived a long and busy life, devoted to the care of his numerous family and his farm. He died suddenly, August 10, 1831, beloved and respected by all. Of his numerous family there is now only one alive, Cyrus Brown, who still occupies the old ancestral homestead which has been occupied by this family for near a century and a half.

The old original patent bears date September 25, 1747, but the place was occupied several years prior to that date.

GEORGE AND JOHN SEAWRIGHT.

The Seawrights are of English extraction. George Seawright, the grandfather of the gentlemen whose names head this article, was born in England. He first settled at Williamsburg, Va., from whence he removed with the Lepers and Kings to Middle river district. His wife, whose maiden name was King, was an English lady. They had but one child, a son, John Seawright. When a mere lad his mother removed to Georgia, where he lived until he attained his twentieth year, when he returned to Augusta county, to take possession of the estate left him by his father. He married Jane Sharp De Laney. She was born in Pennsylvania, in 1789, and died in 1842. His decease occurred in 1861. Seven children were born to them: Mary Sharp, Jane, Rebecca L., Ann (widow of J. E. Myers), John, George and Elizabeth. The daughters are dead. George and John built the present mill, which they dedicated to their parents, and were engaged in business together until 1876, at which time George was married to Miss E. F. Allen. He has occupied several positions of trust and responsibility, the duties of which he has discharged satisfactorily to his constituents and with credit to himself. In 1838 he was appointed magistrate of the county by the governor. He served the county in this capacity until 1851, when the office became by revision of the constitution an elective one. The following year, 1852, he was nominated and elected for the position he had so

*From Central Presbyterian, Richmond, Va.

acceptably filled, but declined to serve. Since 1880 he has been engaged in merchandising at Stonewall. The farm of Mr. Seawright is one worthy of especial notice. About a mile and a half from his residence is a mineral spring which is possessed of valuable medicinal qualities. Its waters have been analyzed by Dr. Taylor, state chemist, who pronounces them to be equal to the most noted springs of Virginia. These waters are being rapidly introduced into all sections, and are found to be highly curative in many forms of disease. There is also on this farm a very valuable vein of iron ore.

In 1876 Mr. Seawright was married to Miss Elizabeth, daughter of James and Sarah Ann (Swank) Allen. She was born in 1856, on June 4, 1813, on the farm settled by his grandfather. They have five children: George, Ann Elizabeth, Evaline, John and Martha. John and Jane are deceased. John Seawright (the elder) was born December 3, 1815, and married Frances Isabella Cupp, daughter of Jno. J. Cupp. She was born in 1839, and died May 19, 1883. They had four children: John E., Lida F., Mary H. and George C. All these children except Mary H. are deceased.

J. A. PATTERSON, JR.

J. A. Patterson, Jr., is a lineal descendant of William Patterson, of Scotch-Irish descent, who emigrated to Augusta county over one hundred years ago, from Ireland, and was therefore one of the pioneers of the county. James Patterson, one of his descendants, became the father of three sons, James, John and Samuel. Samuel married Peggy Craig, and they raised a family of ten children, among whom was James A., who was born in 1818. He married Mary, daughter of James and Virginia (Bell) Patterson, and she is the only survivor of a family of ten children.

Among the children of James A. Patterson is James A., Jr., who was born in 1843. When sixteen years of age, he engaged as an apprentice in the store of Mr. M. Harvey Effinger, one of the prominent business men of Harrisonburg, Virginia. Being an apt pupil, he acquired a thorough and practical business education, and thereby laid the solid foundation for a successful business career.

He was still engaged with Mr. Effinger when the late war broke out, and he cheerfully relinquished his cherished designs to respond to the call of his state for volunteers. He enlisted in Co. A, 52d Va. Inf., in April, 1861, as a private, and participated in the following engagements: Alleghany Mountain, in December, 1861; battle of McDowell, in May, 1862; and in all the engagements in the Valley campaign, in 1862; also in the battles of Seven Pines, Malvern Hill, Cross Keys, Port Republic, Second Manassas, and the capture of Harper's Ferry, in 1862. He was also engaged in the battle of Sharpsburg, in 1862, where he lost an arm. After having sufficiently recovered, he was appointed as first assistant door-keeper of the Confederate congress at Richmond. He was commissioned as major by Gen. Breckenridge, with instructions to recruit for the cavalry service in Virginia valley, and was engaged in this duty when the war closed, in 1865. As a soldier he was brave, efficient and fearless.

When the war closed he was absolutely destitute of any means to commence in business, but being possessed of well known business ability, integrity and credit, he was enabled to establish himself in business, which he conducted for about eighteen months, when he came to Waynesboro, and engaged with Mr. J. B. Smith in merchandising, under the firm name of Smith & Patterson, and they continued in business for about eleven years. In the meantime they purchased the Waynesboro flouring mill, which had a capacity of fifteen thousand bushels, and was conducted as a

custom mill. The mill was practically placed under the supervision of Mr. Patterson. Three years subsequent to their purchase they increased its capacity to one hundred thousand bushels of wheat, by placing in improved machinery, and conducted it as a custom and merchant mill. The mill subsequently passed into the possession of Mr. Patterson, and he has placed in the full roller system, at an expense of many thousand dollars. The mill now has a capacity of from one hundred and twenty-five to one hundred and forty barrels of flour per day, and the flour manufactured is equal in quality to that of any roller mill in the United States. His sales are principally through the southern states. Enterprise being one of the chief characteristics of Mr. Patterson, he has erected an elevator with a capacity of forty thousand bushels. An illustration properly representing this important industry can be seen on another page. Mr. Patterson is one of the sagacious, enterprising, public-spirited, business men of Augusta county. It is to such men that the county is indebted for the measure of prosperity it enjoys.

Politically he affiliates with the democratic party. He has held the office of mayor of Waynesboro for six years, and refused the renomination to this office. In 1866 he married Miss Nannie E., daughter of the late J. B. Smith. They have three children living: Etta, Annie and J. Frank.

REV. DANIEL YOUNT.

The Yount family originated in the liberty-loving country of Switzerland. The progenitor of the American branch of the family emigrated to America in an early day, and settled in York county, Pennsylvania, and engaged in farming. Joseph Yount, grandfather of the subject of this sketch, moved to Rockingham county, Virginia, and in 1808 to Augusta county, on the farm where Irenus Koener now lives. This farm he practically improved, and he was considered a model farmer. He was a consistent member of the Brethren church, and died at an advanced age, respected by all. He married Elizabeth Bowman, who died in 1853, aged about seventy-five years. They were blessed with nine children: Esther, Samuel, Martin, Joseph, Benjamin, David, Jacob, John and Daniel.

Samuel was born April 30, 1802. He purchased the farm where his son Samuel now resides, and engaged in farming and stock-raising. He was an honest, upright man, and accorded to each man his just dues. He well succeeded in his chosen vocation, and was a member of the Brethren church. He departed this life January 23, 1869. He married Eliza Whitmore, who passed over the river April 2, 1865, aged fifty-five years. The issue of this union was five children: Susan (Wine), Daniel, John, Samuel and Emma (Grove).

Daniel Yount was born October 28, 1832, reared on a farm, and early taught habits of industry and economy. He received a common school education, but by observation, extended reading and travel has become possessed of a large fund of valuable information. Since 1872 he has officiated as a minister of the Brethren church. Rev. Yount is one of the prosperous, progressive farmers of the county, and the fine farm buildings that grace his farm, which are here represented, are index of the man. October 13, 1857, he was married to Miss Margaret C., daughter of the late D. P. Bowman, of Rockingham county. Mrs. Yount was born March 1, 1840. Their marriage has been blessed with one son, Walter B., born June 22, 1859.

SAMUEL YOUNT.

Samuel Yount, son of Samuel and Eliza (Whitmore) Yount, was born May 18, 1846, on the farm where he now resides. Under the tutelage of his father he became proficient in agricultural

pursuits and has adopted farming as his life's vocation, consequently he keeps abreast of the improvements in stock, mechanical devices, etc., that tend to make the prosperous farmer. In February, 1863, he enlisted in Co. E, 1st Va. Cav., and participated in the battles of the Wilderness and Cold Harbor, in which latter engagement he was wounded, June 2, 1864, which temporarily incapacitated him for military duty. Some four months later having recovered he rejoined his command and continued in the army until the close of the war, when he returned home and resumed farming. An illustration of his residence can be found on another page. Politically, he affiliates with the democratic party, but believes in sustaining men and principles regardless of party. October 15, 1860, he was married to Virginia E., daughter of David Bowman, of Rockingham county. She was born September 8, 1848. They have two children—Effie L. and Minnie S.

JOHN E. HAMILTON.

The Hamiltons are descendants of the sturdy Scotch-Irish people so many of whom were the original settlers in Augusta county. Isabella Hamilton and her husband became the parents of three children, viz.: Nancy (Allen), William and John. The children of John were eleven in number, as follows: Isabella (Bateman), Henry H., who married Isabella J. Wilson; James W., who was killed at the second battle of Manassas; Dr. Robert S., who married Ella Allen; J. E.; J. P., who married Mary Wilson; Nancy J. (Barksdale); Hugh, who married Bettie E. Caldwell; Mary (Allen); Annie E. and Thomas P. John Hamilton, father of the above children, still survives at the advanced age of seventy-nine years, and has ever been accounted one of the honorable, upright citizens of the county, and he is now enjoying the decline of life with his children, surrounded with the comforts and blessings which represent a well spent life. Barbary J. (Harnesberger), his companion through the journey of life, still survives at the advanced age of seventy-five years. John E. Hamilton was born January 22, 1838, and received a good common school education. In 1861, when his state called for troops, during the late war, he enlisted in Co. G, 52nd Va. Inf., as a private, and was promoted by regular gradations to the office of first lieutenant. The last two years he was in the service he commanded a battalion of sharpshooters. He participated in the principal battles fought by "Stonewall" Jackson and Gen. Lee, and was at Appomattox at the surrender. Returning home at the close of the war he resumed farming, in which occupation he is at present engaged. An illustration of his residence can be found on another page. He was appointed land assessor in 1880. He was appointed to the office of county treasurer to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Mr. S. Paul. He was subsequently nominated for this office and that of the state legislature on the Readjusters ticket and polled the full party vote, but was defeated, the district being largely democratic. In 1860 he was married to Theodosia A., daughter of James W. Hudson, of Staunton. She was born November 29, 1842. They have been blessed with ten children—William E., Frank W., Retta G., Arie E., Gertrude, Bell, Mollie E., Theodosia, Nellie M. and Carrie H.

H. A. S. HAMILTON.

As will be seen elsewhere, the Hamiltons are of Scotch-Irish descent. Since their settlement in Augusta county the family have been largely interested in agricultural pursuits, and have done their full share in developing the county. H. A. S., son of John and Barbary J. (Harnesberger) Hamilton, was born June 9, 1848, and now owns a

portion of the old homestead. Reared to practical farming, he has ever taken a deep interest in the introduction and raising of fine stock. For the last six years he has made a specialty of fine sheep and hogs, and has purchased thoroughbred sheep from Canada bred by Snell Bros., Miller and others. His sales of fine sheep have extended to nearly every county in the state, also in West Virginia, Georgia, and other southern states, and up to the present time no one has visited his farm with the intention of purchasing but what have done so, and in every instance he has received letters of commendation from the purchasers—a more satisfactory indorsement could not be given. He has been the successful competitor for premiums at every fair he has exhibited. Southdown and Cotswold sheep are his specialties. For two years he has taken all the premiums in Southdowns at the state fair. In 1883 he took sixteen first premiums at the Roanoke fair, on both breeds, which gives him an unprecedented record as a successful sheep breeder. Mr. Hamilton is to be highly commended for this practical demonstration of progressiveness which accrues to the benefit of the whole farming community. In 1883, he served on the awarding committee, on sheep and hogs, at the state fair of Ohio. January 24, 1878, he was married to Bettie E. Caldwell, and they are the parents of four children—Guy W., Susie E., Ova J. and John S.

JOHN T. SMITH.

The Smith family are of Scotch-Irish extraction, and the first authentic record we have of any member of the family was when they were located in Maryland, where Eleven Smith was born. Upon reaching manhood's estate he moved to Louisa county, Virginia, where he remained until his death, in April, 1859, at the advanced age of ninety-two years. He married a Miss Desper, who died October 30, 1837. They became the parents of two children, viz.: John B., who was born August 9, 1818, and a daughter named Nancy. In the spring of 1847, John B. Smith started for Missouri, by way of Waynesboro, but finding a good opening for the mercantile business in this place, he changed his plans and here established himself in business. He subsequently purchased the farm where his son, John T. Smith, now resides, and engaged in farming until the close of the late war, when he re-engaged in merchandising, in connection with Mr. J. A. Patterson, Jr. They afterwards purchased the Waynesboro flouring mill, and he was engaged in milling at the time of his death, which occurred March 17, 1883. Mr. Smith was eminently a business man prompt, energetic and reliable, and as a consequence, was successful in accumulating a handsome competency. He married Mary J. Grove, who was born January 16, 1823, and departed this life December 19, 1878. Both Mr. and Mrs. Smith were members of the Presbyterian church. The issue of this union was three children: B. F., Nannie E. (Patterson), and John T. John T. Smith was born October 13, 1846. When in his eighteenth year, or in April, 1864, he enlisted in Co. F, 1st Va. Cav., and participated in the battle of Piedmont and many important skirmishes. He continued in the service until the close of the late war, when he returned home and engaged in farming on the farm he now owns of two hundred and seventy acres, which is one of the best in this section, an illustration of which can be found on another page of this work. Politically, he affiliates with the democratic party. In 1871 he married Miss Alice E. Patterson, who died in 1875, leaving two children—Phillip C. and Mary A. In 1876 he was united in marriage with Miss Nannie A. Watkins, of Maysville, Kentucky, daughter of Mr. Richard Watkins, a prominent merchant of that place. They have three children—Richard B., Annie Bell, and Charles S.

COL. HAZAEL J. WILLIAMS.

Col. Hazael J. Williams, one of the prominent farmers of the county, was born April 28, 1830. His father, Hazael Williams, was a very reputable gentleman, a mechanic of more than ordinary ability, and a worthy citizen. He died in 1842, when the subject of this biography was a lad of twelve years. The boyhood of Col. Williams was one of toil and self-denial. He was denied the privilege of an education in books, but in that other school, in which the teachers are observation and experience, he was an apt pupil and his opportunities extensive. At the age of sixteen he was thrown upon his own resources, with a widowed mother and three younger sisters dependent upon him for support. He followed the vocation of a carpenter up to the year 1861, when he entered the service as captain of Co. D, 5th Va. Inf. In 1862 he was promoted to the rank of major, and the following year was advanced to the position of lieutenant-colonel of the regiment. Although in command of the regiment from 1862 until the close of the war, he did not obtain his commission as colonel until 1864. He did gallant service in the Confederate cause, and in the many battles in which his regiment was engaged, they were victorious, until they met disaster at the battle of Winchester. At the battle of Bull Run he was severely wounded, and again at the battle of Winchester. On October 19, 1864, at the battle of Cedar Creek, he was permanently disabled, and for twelve months was unfit for service, during which time he was at his home. After peace was declared, the colonel returned to civil life and engaged in agricultural pursuits, in which vocation he has since been engaged. Col. Williams has been twice married. His first wife, Miss Mary A. Miller, to whom he was married in 1856, was born in Augusta county, June 10, 1834, and died August 28, 1877. Ten children were born to them—George W., John H., Emma V., Robert E. Lee, Martin L., James E., Hazael J., Charles L., Samuel F., and Margaret A. October 8, 1878, he married, for his second wife, Miss Rebecca Jane McCormick. This lady was born November 17, 1840, and was the daughter of Robert and Sally (Steele) McCormick. Her father, Robert McCormick, was born July 13, 1802, and died December 4, 1879. His wife was born December 4, 1804, and died September 15, 1881. Robert McCormick was the original inventor of the McCormick mower and reaping machine. Mr. and Mrs. Williams have had born to them two children—Nettie May and Leander M. Mr. Williams owns four hundred and fifty acres of good farming land. His home farm consists of two hundred and eighty-seven acres, and is situated two and one-half miles south of the village of Greenville. He and his wife are members of the Presbyterian church. In politics he is a republican.

JOHN BROWN.

John Brown, son of John and Elizabeth Zimmerman Brown, was born in Rockingham county, Virginia, August 18, 1829. He followed the vocation of a blacksmith until December 20, 1857, at which time he was married to Miss Eliza, daughter of George and Elizabeth (Tedford) Greeding. Mrs. Brown was born in Augusta county, Virginia, July 14, 1819. Her parents were of German descent, but were both born in Virginia. To Mr. and Mrs. Brown have been born two children: Mary Margaret and George Adam. Since 1857 Mr. Brown has followed farming; his farm (subject of illustration) is under good cultivation, well watered, has good improvements, and consists of two hundred and thirty-five acres. The elder Brown was of English

descent, and was born in 1802. He removed to Brunswick, Illinois, where he died during the late war. His wife was of German extraction and died in 1872. She was one of a family of twelve children, seven of whom—Sarah, Frances, George, Barbara, Ellen, Emily Jane and Thomas—are living. Catherine and Frances reside in Harvey county, Kansas. George resides in Page county, Virginia.

CAPT. C. B. COINER.

The Coiners are of German extraction, a representative of this family having emigrated from Germany in an early day and settled in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, about 1760, where he raised a family of nine sons, all of whom, with one exception, came to Virginia and settled in Augusta county about 1784. The family has since largely increased and now numbers about 140 voters in Augusta county. The numerous members of the descendants of these heads of families have notably been honest, industrious and prosperous citizens, and by their united efforts have largely added to the material wealth of the county. Phillip Coiner, grandfather of the subject of this sketch, married Catharine Miller, and lived on the farm now in the possession of David W. Coiner, one of his sons. Both attained a ripe old age. Among their family of ten children was Solomon D. Coiner, who was born in 1805 and died in 1867. When a young man he learned the miller's trade and followed this vocation for eighteen years. About 1845 he purchased the farm where his son, Capt. C. B. Coiner, now lives, and devoted the balance of his life to farming. He married Susanna Miller, who was born in 1812, who survives her husband and is enjoying a ripe old age, surrounded with all comforts necessary to her happiness, her home being with her son, Capt. C. B. She is, as Mr. Coiner was, a member of the Presbyterian church of Tinkling Springs. They were blessed with six children, viz.: J. S., who was killed at the battle of Spotsylvania Court House, May 12, 1864; Virginia C., Sarah A., C. B., Mary S. (deceased), and Hannah R. Capt. C. B. Coiner was born January 30, 1842. He was attending the Virginia Military Institute when war was declared between the Northern and Southern States. He responded to the call of his state for volunteers and was sent to Richmond April 21, 1861, where for two months he drilled recruits who were centered here. In June, 1861, he enlisted as drill master in Co. G, 52nd Va. Inf., and was ultimately promoted to the captaincy of the company he first went out with. He made a most gallant and efficient commanding officer, and participated in every battle and skirmish of "Stonewall" Jackson in the Valley, and was with Gen. Lee in the seven days' fight below Richmond, also at the battles of Cedar Mountain, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Second Manassas, Gettysburg, The Wilderness; wounded May 18, 1864. He was also with Gen. Early in the Valley, Mine Run, siege of Petersburg, and was present at the surrender of Appomattox. His military career was a most active and onerous one. At the close of the war he returned home and, like Cincinnatus, resumed the plow and has been most successful in his chosen vocation, as his well tilled fields attest. An illustration of his farm buildings can be found on another page. In 1870 he was married to Miss B. T. Miller, who died in 1878, leaving three children: DeLacy H., Everett E., and Claiborn B. In 1880 he was united in marriage with Alice L. Watson, who departed this life in 1881. He was married in 1883 to Carrie B. Smith, his present wife. Politically, Capt. Coiner affiliates with the democratic party. He is a member of the Presbyterian church, of which he is a member of the board of deacons.

JOHN W. FAUVER.

The subject of this brief sketch, John W. Fauver, was born in Augusta county, Virginia, July 31, 1822. He was reared on a farm and has been a most apt pupil in agricultural operations, as his well tilled fields amply attest. He is in possession of the old homestead of one hundred and fifty acres, to which he has been enabled to add, by good business management, nearly nine hundred acres more of very fine land, which makes him quite an extensive landed proprietor. On his farm can be found iron ore, lead, marble, and other minerals, which will some day be utilized. In 1858 Mr. Fauver engaged in the distilling business, which he successfully conducted until 1872, since which time he has given his undivided attention to farming. An illustration of his beautiful farm residence can be found on another page of this volume. Daniel Fauver, father of John W., was born in 1804 and departed this life in 1878. His mother, Catharine Fauver, was born in 1806 and is still living at the advanced age of seventy-eight years. They became the parents of ten children, all of whom are living with one exception.

DABNEY C. RAMSEY.

Dabney C. Ramsey, son of J. M. Ramsey was born in Nelson county, Virginia, October 12, 1844. His father was also a native of Nelson county and was born in 1820. His mother was a Virginia lady. She was the mother of five children—Melvina, Dellila, Dabney C., Andrew J. and Susan. Dabney C. was married October 9, 1864, to Miss Lovina E., daughter of David and Catherine Fauver. She was born in Augusta county, December 29, 1842. Eight children have been born to them, six of whom are living—Thomas L., Dorsey Bell, Arthur M., Oscar M., Wilford D., and Cora Birdie Hyde. Willanna E. and John F. are deceased. Mr. Ramsey served in the Confederate army. His home farm consists of one hundred and eighty-six acres of valuable land; besides this he has a large tract of mountain land, which is rich in minerals, especially tin, lead and iron.

GEO. C. MISH.

Henry Mish, the father of George C. Mish, was a native of York county, Pennsylvania, where he was born in 1810. Upon removal to Augusta county he purchased the farm now owned by his son, George C., which now comprises two hundred and eighty acres of fine farming land (see illustration). The elder Mish was twice married, his first wife, Miss Angeline Wallace, was born in Rockingham county, Va., in 1814. She was the mother of eight children: Elizabeth J., Mary Margaret, Amelia M., Virginia D., Martha T., John W., William P. and George C. Her decease occurred January 7, 1866. Three years later Mr. Mish was again married to Miss Melissa Brown Lee. By this marriage there were two children: Jessie Lee and Thomas Henry. George C. Mish was born March 9, 1856. October 17, 1878, he married Miss Ella Moore, daughter of James B. Smith, Esq. There have been born to them four children: Cornelia W., Wallace, Henry B. and Frank C. Wallace is deceased.

ISAAC COFFMAN.

The Coffmans are of French extraction, a representative of this family having emigrated to America prior to the revolutionary war, and settled in Pennsylvania. From that state Christian Coffman emigrated to Rockingham county, Virginia, where he lived until 1812, when he removed to Augusta county and purchased the farm now owned by his grandson, Isaac. He married Bar-

bary Fry, who died in 1813, leaving seven children, viz.: Jacob, Christian, John, Samuel, Barbary, Susan and Catharine. For his second wife he married Catharine Garber, and they raised seven children. Mr. Coffman died in 1854 in his eighty-fifth year. Christian Coffman was born March 14, 1797, in Rockingham county, and came to Augusta county with his parents. He purchased the old homestead where he now resides at the advanced age of eighty-seven years, having long since passed the allotted age of man—three score and ten. His memory is still bright and he recounts the many hardships and inconveniences to which people were subject, one of which was the waggoning of their farm products to Richmond, many miles distant. October 19, 1819, he married Annie Garber, who was born in 1795, and is therefore two years older than her aged partner in the journey of life. They are members of the Brethren church. They raised four children: Joseph, who died in February, 1860; Susan (Garber), who died in 1863; Martha (Borden), who died in 1871, and Isaac. Isaac Coffman was born August 25, 1828, and reared on the farm which he now possesses, he being the third and his children the fourth generation on that farm. Like his progenitors, he is engaged in tilling the soil—one of the most independent vocations of man. Several years since, Mr. Coffman visited the West, and among other places Salt Lake City and some place in Iowa, where he became so impressed with Mormon religion that he became a member of the reorganized church of the Latter Day Saints—they not recognizing polygamy. November 3, 1850, he married Catharine Mills, who died March 4, 1879, aged fifty-one years. March 4, 1880, he married Maggie S., daughter of John Wm. Brown (deceased). She was born February 10, 1854. They have two children: Isaac W., born November 19, 1881, and Amy A., born October 12, 1883. Mrs. Coffman is a member of the Baptist church.

SAMUEL CARRELL.

Randolph Carrell, father of Samuel, was born in eastern Virginia, and when a boy came to Augusta county with his father. He "boated" on the river to Georgetown for several years, long before the advent of the railroad. He is now living near Mt. Solon, and is ninety years of age. He married Annie Crickenberger, who died in March, 1878, aged about seventy-six years. They raised a family of five children, Milla (Hogshead), Samuel, Sally (Mrs. Dr. Wilson), Eliza, Polly (Reaves). On reaching his majority, Samuel went to learn the carpenter's trade, and engaged in this business for nearly seven years prior to the war. In June, 1861, he enlisted in Co. A, 52d regt. Va. Vol. Inf., and participated in the battles of Cross Keys, Port Republic and then went below Richmond with his command, and was in a series of engagements lasting some five days. At the battle of Second Manassas, May 28, 1862, he was wounded in the right leg by a shell, which rendered amputation necessary just below the knee. In this dismembered condition he was taken home to Mt. Solon. Having recovered, although without money he was not discouraged, and procured a wooden limb and immediately set himself energetically to work at his trade, and from this time until 1884 has engaged extensively as a builder and contractor, and many of the fine farm buildings to be found in the county were erected by him. In 1872 he purchased a farm of one hundred acres, where he now resides, engaged in farming, and his buildings, an illustration of which can be found on another page, were largely erected by himself. Mr. Carrell is marked for his energy and enterprise, and has succeeded by his own industry under physical disabilities that would have discouraged a man less reso-

lute, in accumulating a competency, which is another proof of the adage: "Where there is a will there is a way." Too much credit cannot be given Mr. Carrell for what he has accomplished, handicapped as he has been. April 1, 1875, he was united in marriage with Sallie, daughter of Levi and Polly (Carpenter) Shaver, of Rockingham county. They are the parents of the following children: Willie S., John R., Bessie B. and Samuel E., deceased.

GEORGE W. FAUBER.

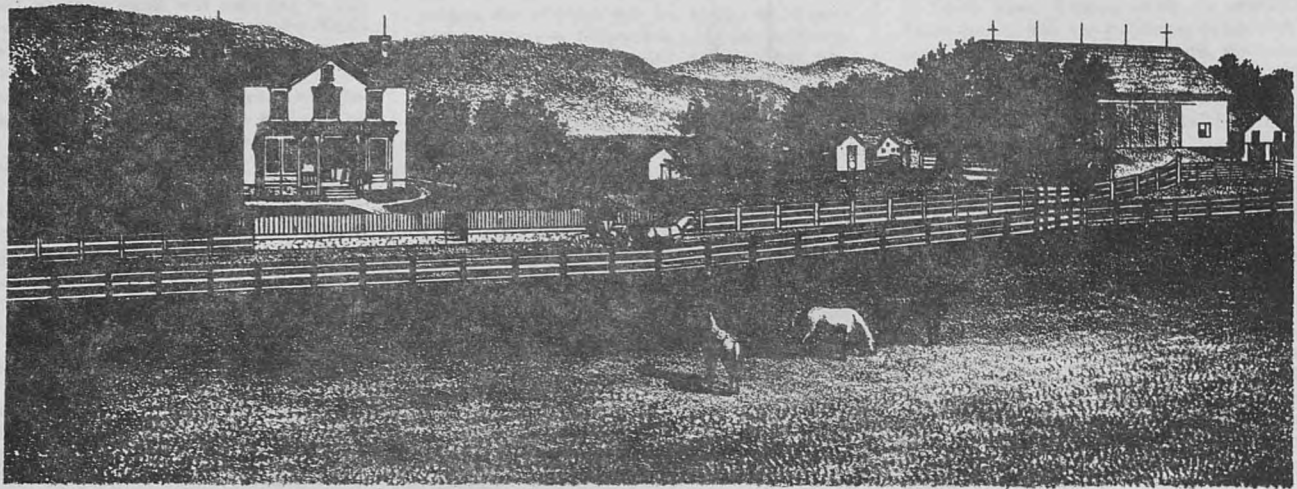
George W. Fauber was born October 24, 1826, in South River district, where his grandfather, Peter Fauber, who was a German, had settled in a very early day. Samuel C., his son, and father of George W., was born in Augusta county, Virginia, in 1796. He married Miss Jane Trout, who was born in this county in 1798. He died in 1874. Her death occurred ten years later. They had eleven children, seven of whom are living, as follows: Sarah Ann, David T., Mary A., Elizabeth, Catherine, Jane Ellen and George W. In 1855, Mr. Fauber was married to Miss Margaret A. Harner. She was born in Augusta county, Virginia, December 14, 1827. In 1865, Mr. Fauber was elected Superintendent of the Poor, which position he filled acceptably, with the aid of his wife as Matron, for seventeen years. At the expiration of this time, in 1883, he removed to his present home, which he purchased in 1874, an illustration of which can be seen elsewhere in this volume. It is a valuable property of one hundred and forty acres. They have one child, Bertie George, who was born March 8, 1871.

A. H. KENDIG.

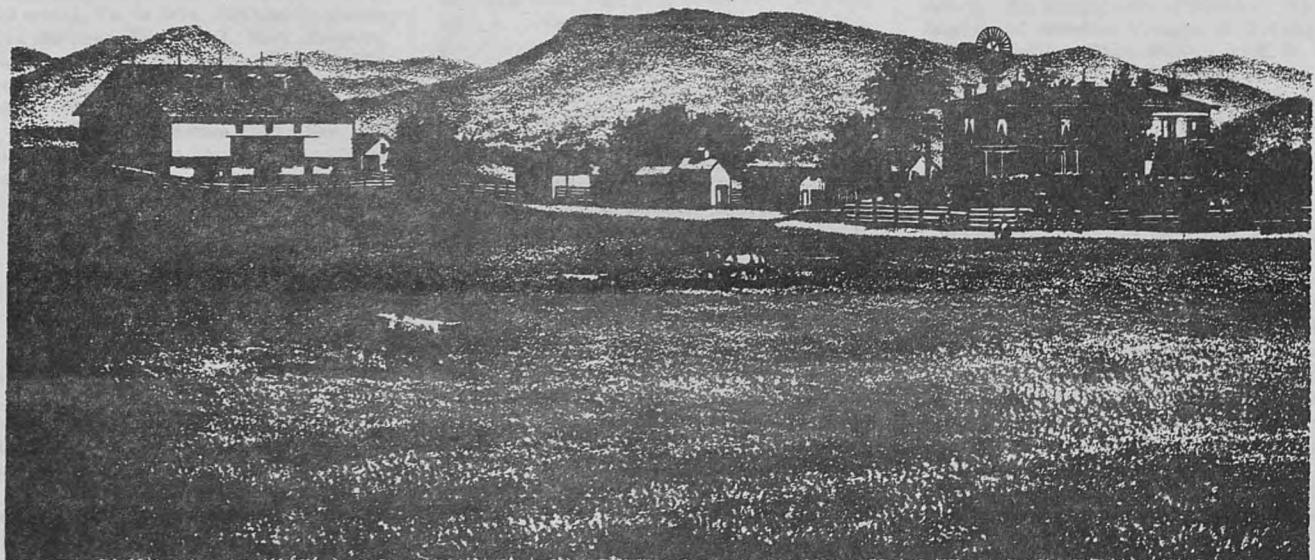
The ancestors of Mr. Kendig on his father's side came from Holland, and on his mother's side from Germany, and settled in Pennsylvania about the time of the Revolutionary war. Emanuel Kendig, the fourth child and father of the subject of this sketch, was born in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, June 17, 1791. He married Elizabeth Graff. They became the parents of ten children, of whom A. H. was the fourth child. Mr. A. H. Kendig was raised on a farm and has followed this vocation all his life and has been a very successful farmer, he having accumulated a handsome competency. To accomplish this he has been obliged to rely almost wholly upon his own resources, energy and industry. A fine illustration of his farm residence can be found upon another page, which is ocular evidence of his being one of the enterprising and successful agriculturists of this section. Of late years, Mr. Kendig, in company with his son, E. D. Kendig, has made a specialty of fruit raising. Mr. Kendig married Elizabeth Wenger, daughter of Abraham Wenger, of Rockingham county, Virginia. Their children are E. D., born May 19, 1850, and Leanah J., who survive, and three who died in infancy. Mr. Kendig is a member of the Christian church, and his wife of the German Baptist.

THE PATTERSON FAMILY.

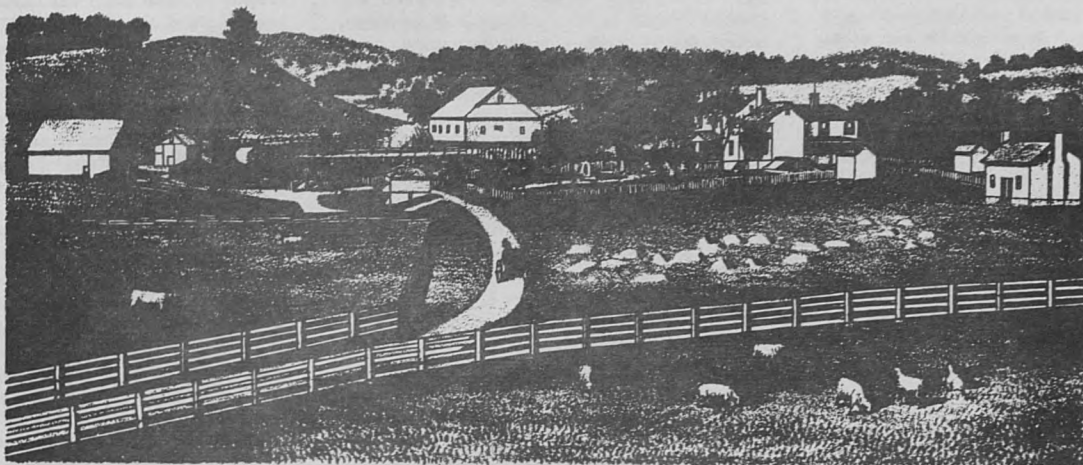
William Patterson, the progenitor of the American branch of this family, was of Scotch-Irish extraction, and emigrated to America from Ireland about 1740 and settled in Augusta county, on South river, above Waynesboro. He there married a Miss Henderson, and a few years subsequent, on account of the scarcity of timber, moved to the farm where George Patterson now resides. Here he lived until quite an aged gentleman, when he made it his home with his son James on the farm now owned by William Patterson, and here remained until his death, which did not occur until he had attained the ripe old age of over one hundred years. They reared four children, viz.:



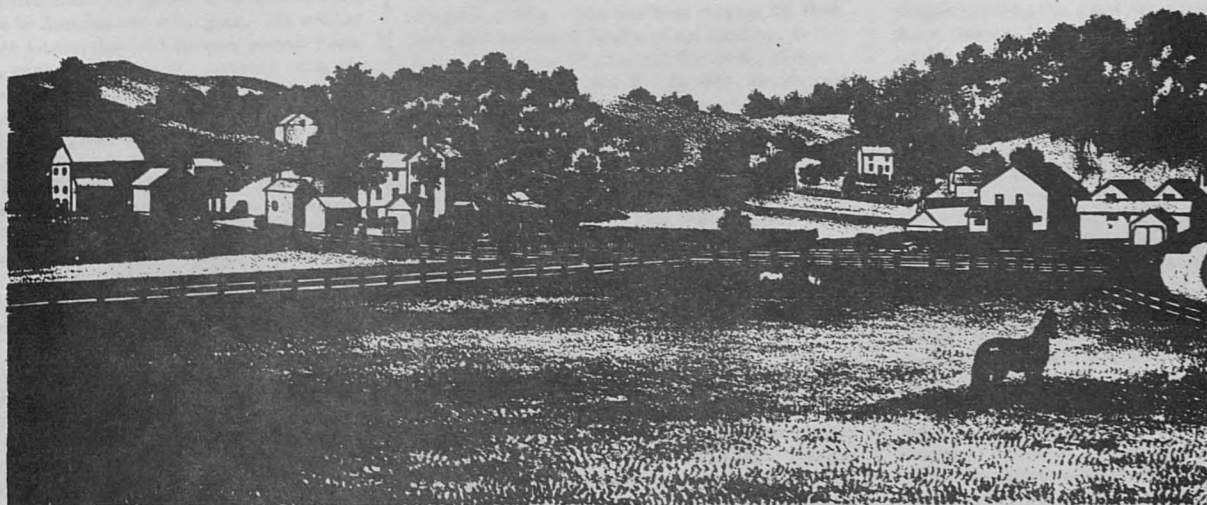
RESIDENCE OF SAMUEL YOUNT, MIDDLE RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF DANIEL YOUNT, MIDDLE RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF JOHN T. SHIELDS, RIVER-HEADS DIST, AUGUSTA CO, VA.



RESIDENCE & DISTILLERY OF J. FRANK CLEMMER, RIVER-HEADS DIST, AUGUSTA CO, VA.

William, James, Virginia and Jane. After his father's death William disposed of his property and moved to Kentucky. James lived and died on the farm now owned by William and James G. Patterson. He married Miss Grimes, and they were blessed with thirteen children, Martha (Beard), Sally (Craig), Deborah (Wilson), Nancy (McCullough), William, who emigrated to Kentucky, James, Jane (Whines), John A., Samuel, and four others who died in infancy. John A. was born in 1789. He moved to the farm now owned by his son, Charles S. Patterson, where he owned between seven and eight hundred acres of land, which was his home until his death, in June, 1854. He officiated as magistrate for many years, and was a high-minded, upright gentleman—one from whom the community was better for his having lived. He was a member of the Old Stone, or Augusta Presbyterian Church, and as one of its leading members held the office of elder for many years. He married Polly Craig, daughter of George Craig, one of the prominent families of the section. She was born about 1796, and departed this life in 1857. The issue of their marriage was eight children, viz.: Bettie E. (Guthrie), John A. (deceased), James G., Mary J. (Koiner,) deceased, George T. (deceased), Benjamine G., Charles S., William B., and two who died in infancy. Charles S. Patterson was born May 8, 1835, and was raised on a farm, receiving a good common school education. He chose farming as his life's vocation, and can now be counted among the prominent, progressive and successful agriculturists of Augusta county, and from his many broad acres he reaps ample harvests as a result of intelligent farming. His chief characteristics are honesty and integrity. June 9, 1859, he married Margaret J., daughter of David R. Hopkins, of Rockingham county. She was born in November, 1836. They are blessed with four children, Annie S., Howard H., Lavinia C. and David H. Both Mr. and Mrs. Patterson are members of the Presbyterian church, of which he is a deacon. James G. Patterson, above referred to, married Elizabeth A., daughter of Maj. William Poague. John A. married Margaret Snapp, William B. married M. T. Willson, Benjamin G. married Fanny Coiner.

THE KERR AND DUNLAP FAMILIES.

Three brothers—Robert, William and James Kerr—came to America in 1763. James settled in the Carolinas, William in Ohio and Robert in Pennsylvania, about forty miles from Philadelphia. They were of Scotch descent. Robert, born 1720, married Elizabeth Bailey, of Wales, in 1763, and came to America the same year. He resided in Chester county, then of Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, until 1783, when he removed with his family to Augusta county, Virginia. His homestead was the Summerdean farm, which is now owned by his great great grandson, M. Green Kerr, son of Samuel X. Kerr. The children of Robert and Elizabeth Kerr were: Daniel, who settled in Pocahontas county, Virginia; Margaret, who married Robert Dunlap in 1792; Elizabeth, who married Isaac Gray; William, who married in 1796 Mary A. Grove, daughter of Wendell Grove, who resided on an adjoining farm, and David, who died unmarried. William and Mary A. Kerr were the parents of Elizabeth, who married Moses Wallace, near Craigsville; Bailey, who died aged 23, unmarried; David, who married Jane Dunlap, daughter of Robert Dunlap; Robert Grove Kerr, who married Cassandra McCutchan, daughter of Downey McCutchan; his descendants reside in Fayette and Lampasas counties, Texas; Margaret, who married Elijah Hogshead, of Middlebrook, Augusta county, Virginia;

Sarah, who married Rev. Peter C. Hoge, of Albemarle county, Virginia. Samuel X., who married Eliza Wallace, daughter of John Wallace, near Natural Bridge, Virginia, and Mary E. P. Drewry, of Richmond, Virginia; William, who married Lucretia Clarke, daughter of Dr. Clarke, and Elizabeth Swoope, daughter of Washington Swoope, and Nannie Williamson, daughter of Daniel Williamson, of Petersburg, Virginia; Mary Jeane, who married Dr. William N. Anderson, of Botetourt county, Virginia. William Kerr inherited the Summerdean farm from his father William, and his grandfather, Robert Kerr. It is now owned by M. Green Kerr, son of Samuel X. Kerr. John Dunlap and his wife Nancy, whose maiden name was Colvin, resided in Campbeltown, Argyleshire, Scotland. They were the parents of five sons and two daughters, with all of whom they emigrated in the year 1775 to America, and settled in Chambersburg, Pennsylvania. Two of the sons settled in Tennessee and Kentucky. Three of them, John, Archibald and Robert settled on the head waters of Middle river, in Riverheads township, Augusta county, Virginia. John lived with Robert, and died unmarried, aged eighty. Robert married Margaret Kerr in 1792, daughter of Robert and Elizabeth Kerr, who resided in same neighborhood at Summerdean. The children of Robert and Margaret Dunlap were: Elizabeth, who married Levi L. Stevenson, of Staunton, Virginia; Isabella, who married Robert Sterrett, of Rockbridge county, Virginia; John, who married Isabella North, of Staunton, Virginia, and Isabella Blain, of eastern Virginia; he removed to Atchison county, Missouri; Nancy, who married James A. G. Youell, of Rockbridge county, Virginia; Bailey, born in 1800, who married Sallie Baylor, daughter of George Baylor; settled at Mount Pleasant, near Spring Hill, on Middle river, on a farm once owned by Moffatt; Jane married David Kerr, of Summerdean, Virginia, grandson of Robert and Elizabeth Kerr; Robert died at the age of twenty-three, unmarried; Madison married Martha McKee, of Rockbridge county, and settled on Kerr's creek in said county; William, the youngest, married Mary J. Crawford, daughter of Robert Crawford; his second wife was Mrs. Amanda Blair, daughter of Dr. John McChesney. William resides at the homestead of his father, Robert Dunlap, who was born 1765 in Campbeltown, Argyleshire, Scotland.

ROBERT B. DUNLAP,

son of Bailey Dunlap, was born September 3, 1839. In 1866 he married Amelia M., daughter of Henry and Angeline (Wallace) Mish, of Middlebrook, Augusta county. She was born August 23, 1842, and died leaving a family of six children, as follows: Angeline W., Bailey, Henry M., Kemper, Maggie B. and Amelia M. In 1883, Mr. Dunlap married Susan C., daughter of Nicholas and Christian (Smith) Rhyan. She was born April 22, 1841. John Rhyan and Martha Keisel, the grandparents of Mrs. Dunlap, were of German birth, and first settled in Pennsylvania, and from that state moved to Virginia in an early day. Mr. Dunlap owns the old home farm of two hundred and eighty acres, formerly possessed by his father, located in North River district. See illustration.

B. F. SMITH,

son of John B. Smith, was born February 8, 1843, in Louisa county, Virginia, and when about five years old came with his parents to Augusta county. He received a common school education. During the late war he promptly responded to the call of his state for volunteers, and enlisted in the Waynesboro Guards—52d Va. Inf.—in June, 1861. In the

spring of 1863 he was transferred to Co. F, 1st Va. Cav., and served in the army until the surrender of Gen. Lee. He participated in many important battles with credit to himself. Returning home at the close of the war he engaged in farming and in merchandising with his father for several years. Having concluded to go west he went to Texas, where he remained for nine months and then removed to Missouri, and after a stay of one year in this state he returned home, and April 4, 1871, married Maria C., daughter of the late Judson McCoy, of Staunton. Mr. McCoy was a native of Maryland, but removed to Winchester, Virginia, where he married Jane L., daughter of Baty Carson, one of the old families of that section. Mrs. McCoy was born in 1819, and died April 30, 1884, in Shenandoah county, Virginia. Their children were: Bettie (Mrs. E. M. Cushing), E. J., Baty C., Norval W., Maria C. (Smith), Mary E. (Allen), and Thos. E. B. (deceased). In 1829 Mr. McCoy moved to Staunton, where he was the first coach-maker. He died in November, 1861. Mr. B. F. Smith is engaged in farming, and a view of his residence can be found on another page. He is the father of four children—Nannie H., John F. (deceased), Thomas Edwin, and Harry S. (deceased). Mr. and Mrs. Smith are members of the Waynesboro Presbyterian church.

HENRY B. SEIGG.

In 1782 Paul Seigg, the grandfather of the gentleman whose name heads this notice, came to Augusta county and purchased a large tract of land. He was born in Pennsylvania in 1754. His wife, Susannah Fauver, was of German birth and parentage, and came to this country in 1769. To them were born six children, John, Jacob, Paul, Valentine, David and Susannah. David is still living. He was born in 1797. He married Miss Rebecca Frunkhan, of Rockingham county. She is also living at the advanced age of eighty-three years. Henry B. Seigg was born November 22, 1818. April 28, 1864 he married Miss Martha C. Davis. She was born in Rockingham county, June 5, 1837. They are the parents of five children, Paul, James W., Mary E., Addie and Ward H. Mr. Seigg is one of the substantial farmers of the county, and represents his district upon the board of supervisors. On another page may be seen an illustration of his home.

THOMAS SCOTT HOGSHEAD.

The Hogshead family are of Irish extraction, and first settled in Pennsylvania. In 1829 John Hogshead, the great great grandfather of Thomas Scott Hogshead removed to Augusta county and settled on what is now known as the "Holly Hill" farm which has never been out of the possession of the family. Thomas Hogshead, father of Thomas Scott Hogshead, was born in 1781. His wife, Miss Margaret Hogshead, was born in 1791. He died in 1832. Her death occurred in 1861. To them were born seven children, Thomas Scott being the only survivor. He was married in 1855 to Miss Adelia Jackson Steele, daughter of Thomas and Jane Steele, who were natives of Augusta county. The Steele family are of Scotch-Irish extraction. The date of their emigration to this country is not known, and no authentic history of them is preserved. Mrs. Hogshead was born in 1829. They were blessed with three children, Anna Clifford, Mary Eliza and Emmet William David. The latter lost his life in a railroad catastrophe at Wilboro, Virginia, in December 25 of 1882. Mr. Hogshead is the owner of "Holly Hill," the ancestral home. The farm comprises two hundred and fifty acres of land. [See illustration.]

ENOS OTT.

About 1799 John Ott, a native of Germany, emigrated with his family to America and settled in Pennsylvania, where he resided but a short time, when he removed to Augusta county, Virginia. He had one son, John, who was born in Germany. He married Miss Mary Newcomb. They had one son, also named John, who was born June 5, 1785. He married Miss Hannah Hanger, of Augusta county, where she was born September 18, 1779. His death occurred October 29, 1853. His wife survived him four years, her decease occurring September 23, 1857. They were the parents of Enos Ott, the immediate subject of this notice. Enos was born November 28, 1827. On April 28, 1864, he married Miss Virginia McCormick, daughter of Robert and Sally Steele McCormick. Her father was born July 13, 1802, and her mother December 4, 1804. He died in December, 1880, and she in September of the following year. Mr. and Mrs. Enos Ott are the parents of eight children, Anna Steel, Mary Virginia, Sallie Henrie, Lulla, John Alexander, Robert McCormick, Enos and David Junkin, only four of whom are living. Until 1869 Mr. Ott was interested in the milling business. Since that time he has devoted his energies to farming. His farm consists of seven hundred acres of valuable land, three hundred and fifty of which is in the home farm. In addition to farming, Mr. Ott is engaged in stock raising. A fine view of his residence can be found on another page.

JAMES SHIELDS HAWPE.

The progenitor of the Hawpe family in Virginia was John Hawpe, a Pennsylvanian. The date of his settlement is not definitely known, but was at an early day. He married a Virginia lady by the name of Miss Mary Mizer. Seven children were the result of this union, four daughters and three sons, all of whom are deceased. Adam, their third child, married Margaret Dunlap, of Augusta county, and to them were born six children, as follows: Mary, Susan, James S., Margaret Rachael, Wilfred and Lucy. Mr. Hawpe was born May 7, 1841, and Margaret, his wife, November 5, 1813. His decease occurred September 13, 1880. That of his wife on September 16, 1873. James Shields Hawpe was born April 15, 1836. In 1864 he married Miss Mary Billingsley, daughter of Urban V. Billingsley. She was born in Missouri, April 4, 1829. The result of this marriage is four children, Ada Bell, Clarence D., Edith F. and Garland H. Mr. Hawpe is a thorough and progressive farmer. His farm, an illustration of which can be seen on another page, is about one-half a mile west of Greenville, and comprises one hundred and seventy-five acres of valuable land.

JOHN W. LANDES.

John W. Landes born July 4, 1832. On attaining his majority he was married to Miss Anna, daughter of Joseph and Anna Harshbarger. The parents of Mr. Landes were Christian and Elizabeth Wanger. The Wangers were of German descent. The elder Landes was born April 30, 1809, and died January 16, 1878; his wife was four years his junior, and died in August of 1869; his father came from Pennsylvania at a very early date and settled in Virginia. Mr. and Mrs. John W. Landes are the parents of ten children, only three of whom are living: Sarah Elizabeth, wife of Isaac N. Grove, Nettie Anna, now Mrs. James E. Rankin, and Martha Josephine. Mr. and Mrs. Landes removed to the farm on which they now reside shortly after their marriage. The farm consists of one hundred and forty acres of valuable land, and is situated east of Mount Sidney.

JOHN H. SILLING.

John H. Silling was born in Augusta county, Virginia, February 7, 1847. His father, Enos Silling, was born in 1801; he married Miss Elizabeth Snyder, and reared a family of twelve children; he died in 1861, his wife in 1869. John H. was reared on a farm, and at the age of twenty engaged in merchandizing in the village of Parnassus, in company with J. A. Hamsick. In 1871-2-3 the firm carried on the grocery business in Staunton, and at the same time were engaged in general merchandizing in Pendleton, West Virginia. Mr. Silling is also engaged in the milling business, and is also agent for all kinds of steam machinery. On December 5, 1877, Mr. Silling was married to Miss Annie E. Whitmore, of Augusta county; her father, Daniel Whitmore, was born on September 14, 1793, and served in the war of 1812; he died July 4, 1867. Mr. Whitmore was twice married, his first wife Annie Rush, and was a native of Rockingham county, Virginia, and was born on October 11, 1792, and died October 11, 1857. In 1859 he was again married to Miss Sallie Carroll, of Augusta county, Virginia. This lady was born January 4, 1834. There were three children born by this union, Annie E., Daniel B. and Ida Bell. Her father, Randolph Carroll, is of English extraction and a descendant of John Carroll. He was born in 1795, and married Miss Annie Crickenberger; she was born in Rockingham county, Virginia, in 1794, and died March 6, 1877.

McCORKLE BROS.

The year 1870 witnessed the establishment of this firm, now accounted one of the most thrifty and enterprising in the county. Like most of the successful business houses of the country it had its inception in a small way. The first stock of general merchandise was exposed for sale in the residence of John S. McCorkle. In 1879, however, a commodious building was erected, which is thought to be one of the most pleasant and attractive in the county. Its dimensions are 82½ feet in depth by 40 feet in width, with a 15-foot ceiling. The success of this firm is due largely to those principles of commercial integrity which in all business enterprises is so essential to success. Gentle, affable and courteous, they have, by their straightforward manner of doing business, won the confidence and esteem of a large circle of patrons, and today there is undoubtedly not a more successful house in the county, or whose business has a more steady and healthy growth. We call attention to their illustration on another page.

T. F. HOY.

Isaac Hoy came from Scotland prior to the war of 1812, and settled in eastern Virginia. He reared a family of three sons—Isaac, William and Thomas. William and Thomas went west, and the last heard of them they were fighting the Indians in the vicinity of the Rocky mountains. When about fifty years of age Isaac came to Augusta county, and remained here until his death, in April, 1879, at the advanced age of nine-two years. He first married Miss Taylor, who died leaving eight children. He then married Mildred Hamilton, whose ancestors came from England, she being a lineal descendant of Dr. Hamilton, who settled in eastern Virginia. She died in 1868. By his second marriage he also had eight children, viz.: Thomas F., Cornelia, Isaac, Columbia, James, Lucy and two who died in infancy. Thomas F. Hoy was born April 4, 1833, and received a common school education. When twenty-one years of age he went to learn the miller's trade, and after he had acquired it ran the mill on shares, and by so doing obtained a portion of the means with which to

purchase, in 1863, the saw and grist mill known as Stony Point Mills. September 19, 1864, both mills were burned by the Federal troops in Gen. Sheridan's army, together with seven thousand bushels of wheat. Not discouraged by this unlooked for calamity he commenced to rebuild the saw-mill before the smoke from the dying embers had fairly cleared away. The grist-mill was not rebuilt until 1866, for fear it might again be destroyed. As soon as he had accumulated sufficient means he purchased sixty-five acres of land, and has since added to it until he now has about three hundred and fifty acres. A view of his residence can be found on another page. February 28, 1856, he married Louisa B. Houff, and they have been blessed with ten children, viz.: George C., Rebecca M., Benjamin F., Dora (deceased), James T., Nannie S., Charles E., Sylvester T., Eliza J. and Emily V. Mr. and Mrs. Hoy are members of the Presbyterian church.

J. FRANK CLEMMER.

Distilling has always been one of the industrial interests of Augusta county, and among the pioneers in the business was George D. Clemmer, who began the manufacture of the now famous Clemmer whisky in the year 1800. He began in a very limited way, the distilling being done in the house in which he lived and which was near the site of the present distillery. In 1835 the property came into the possession of D. F. Clemmer, who carried on the business until his decease, which occurred in 18—. Since this time Mr. J. Frank Clemmer has conducted the business, and is the present proprietor. The distillery is located some fourteen miles west of Staunton, and is very complete in all its appointments, and its product has an enviable reputation and an extensive sale.

WALNUT GROVE STOCK FARM.

Walnut Grove Stock Farm, the residence of Capt. G. Julian Pratt, situated on the Greenville road, one mile and a half south of Waynesboro, Virginia, the junction of the C. & O. railroad and the S. V. railroad, is one of the oldest and best known estates in the county, having formerly been the home of Maj. Archibald Stuart, who descends from one of the earliest settlers in the valley. This property came into the possession of Capt. Pratt in 1867, and has since that time been devoted to the breeding and rearing of improved stock, viz.: herd register Jersey cattle and South-down sheep (Walsingham); also Berkshire, Essex, Jersey Red and Poland China swine. The farm is conveniently situated as far as railroad facilities are concerned, and beautifully adapted to the purposes of its owner. Silver creek flows through the estate, furnishing the purest water in every field, and the rolling uplands and rich meadows abundantly supply the needs of the herds and flocks there reared. Capt. Pratt has also devoted a considerable area to the cultivation of fruit, and a thrifty orchard of 1,500 trees is just coming into usefulness and profit.

JOHN W. FAUVER.

John W. Fauver was born July 31, 1838, and reared in the southwestern end of Augusta county. He was bred to the life of a farmer, and now owns the old homestead of his father, which has been in the possession of the Fauver family for nearly a century. The old homestead contained, when Mr. John W. Fauver became the owner of it, in 1853, one hundred and fifty acres. Since 1853 he has added some nine hundred acres and made some of the most valuable improvements to his land and buildings, having torn down the old mansion house and erected one of the finest and most convenient

residences in the county. It is built in the latest modern style, and he has also erected valuable out-buildings. The farm lies on both sides of the Shenandoah Valley railroad, which runs through it for one mile south of Lofton and two miles north of Vesuvius stations. A fine view is obtained from his residence of the railroad. On the farm are fine deposits of manganese and iron ore, which renders it very valuable. Mr. Fauver was engaged in the distillery business from 1858 until 1879. Since that time he has given his attention and time to his farm, which is under a fine state of cultivation. Recently he has invented and patented a ditching machine, which is thought to be one of the greatest inventions that has been made for draining land or throwing up roads. Mr. Fauver volunteered in Co. E, 5th Va. Inf., Stonewall brigade, and served until the close of the war. Mr. Fauver is the architect of his own fortune. By his industry and thrift he has accumulated a well won competency. Liberal to a fault and kind hearted, he has a large circle of friends. Mr. Fauver never was married. His family consists of himself, mother, and sister who is also single. His parents were David Fauver and Catharine

Crest. His father was born in 1804 and died in 1878. His mother was born in 1808 and is still living. They were the parents of ten children, nine of whom are living. All reside in the county and all are highly respected and prosperous. The names of the children are as follows: Susan A. (deceased), Sarah I., John W., Margaret E., Mary C., Eliza A., Luvenia E., Rebecca C., David H. and Amanda S. All were reared on the old homestead by kind and religious parents.

BUMGARDNER & McQUAIDE.

Sixty-four years ago, or in 1820, M. J. Bumgardner, now an old gentleman eighty-four years of age, built the distillery which he and his sons, W. L. and J. A. Bumgardner, now operate, and placed upon the market the now famous brand of "Bumgardner Whisky." The goods were kindly received, and since this time the demand has been steadily growing and now "Bumgardner Whisky" has a remunerative sale in eight or ten states, and, like other classes of goods where the principal recommendation is honesty and purity, "wherever it goes it goes to stay." In 1878 Col. W. L. Bum-

gardner and Capt. John McQuaide formed a co-partnership and established a wholesale liquor house in Staunton. In addition to "Bumgardner"



they carry a full line of everything demanded by the trade.

PERSONAL MENTION.

BEVERLY MANOR.

NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
Lewis Harman.....	1845	Virginia.....	Giant's Mills...	Farmer and stock-raiser.
R. S. Harnsberger.....	1838	Virginia.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. W. Lyon.....	1859	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farming and market gardening.
G. J. Colner.....	1847	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Farmer and stock-dealer.
S. L. Cook.....	1844	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. F. Summerson.....	1847	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Farming and stock-dealer.
John M. Brown.....	1830	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Farmer and stock-grower.
Jacob Bowman.....	1825	Augusta county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Farming and milling.
Capt. E. A. Fulcher.....	1865	Henrico county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and distiller.
Hugh F. Lyle.....	1878	Rockbridge county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Manufacture of plows.
Arch Kinney.....	1838	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer.
Robert Cochran.....	1838	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and storekeeper.
Mrs. T. K. Menefee.....	1872	Botetourt county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farming.
C. T. Palmer.....	1862	Rockingham county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Merchant and farmer.
D. W. Speck.....	1867	Augusta county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Farming.
W. H. Green.....	1876	Ireland.....	Staunton.....	Farming.
George G. Hanger.....	1854	Augusta county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Fmr, saw-mill & steam thresher.
Rev. C. F. Fry.....	1824	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farm'r & missionary colporteur.
John Towberman.....	1826	Augusta county, Va.....	Mint Spring.....	Farmer and stock-grower.
David Henkel.....	1837	Rockingham county, Va.....	Mint Spring.....	Merchant.
I. W. Gillison.....	1840	Augusta county, Va.....	Mint Spring.....	Physician and surgeon.
Col. J. C. Cochran.....	1856	Augusta county, Va.....	Folly Mills.....	Farmer and stock-grower.
A. D. Tribbett.....	1857	Rockbridge county, Va.....	Folly Mills.....	Owner of grist-mill.
Mrs. M. L. Gay.....	1835	Greenbrier county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farming.
William C. Gelger.....	1844	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and former teacher in deaf and dumb school.
M. F. Gilkison.....	1853	Augusta county, Va.....	Folly Mills.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
E. J. Kaupf.....	1853	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Rev. John H. Taylor.....	1839	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Baptist clergyman.
H. D. Peck.....	1878	New York city.....	Staunton.....	Retired.
Mrs. M. M. Griggs.....	1870	Putnam county, Ga.....	Mint Spring.....	Farmer.
Stewart Bolling.....	1852	Dinwiddie county, Va.....	Galens.....	Farmer and stock-dealer.
A. H. Shuey.....	1853	Augusta county, Va.....	Galens.....	Farmer and postmaster.
G. A. Hanger.....	1830	Augusta county, Va.....	Galens.....	Farmer and stock-dealer.
A. W. Dudley.....	1844	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Joseph Houseman.....	1829	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. T. Bell.....	1861	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farming and stock-raiser.
C. R. McGuffin.....	1855	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farming and stock-raiser.
Cyrus H. Snapp.....	1839	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Milling and farming.
James Henderson.....	1804	Augusta county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Farmer and mechanic.
William R. Gorman.....	1863	Baltimore city.....	Staunton.....	Storekeeper at distillery & farm'r.
J. T. Mitchell.....	1829	Frederick county, Md.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
D. A. Snyder.....	1847	Augusta county, Va.....	Staunton.....	Farmer and owner of lime kiln.
C. R. Mason.....	1852	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Railroad contractor and farmer.
J. F. Hanger.....	1852	Augusta county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Farmer and cooper.
James G. Patterson.....	1852	Augusta county, Va.....	Harrison.....	Farmer.

PASTURES DISTRICT.

NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
R. B. Dunlap.....	1834	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer.
John A. Eupman.....	1844	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
James H. Fauver.....	1844	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and proprietor of steam thresher and saw mill.
D. N. Wilson.....	1845	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John Myers.....	1819	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and saw-mill.
E. Geading.....	1810	Shenandoah county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer.
D. A. Hegg.....	1855	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and stock-grower.
E. B. Hegg.....	1852	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and stock-grower.
Capt. H. H. Hauger.....	1840	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Merchant and farmer.
C. Bear.....	1818	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Mechanic and farmer.
G. M. Bear.....	1848	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.

PASTURES DISTRICT—CONTINUED.

NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
J. S. Blair.....	1849	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Physician and surgeon.
G. D. Dudley.....	1858	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John Brown.....	1857	Rockingham Co., Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Jos. B. Trimble.....	1820	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Milling and farming.
Theo. F. Shuey.....	1845	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Stenographer of the U. S. Senate.
Geo. C. Hanger.....	1837	Augusta county, Va.....	Churchville.....	Farmer, steam thresher and saw mill.

RIVER HEADS.

NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
H. C. Palmer.....	1865	Rockingham Co., Va.....	Greenville.....	Merchant.
T. W. Lambert.....	1845	Augusta county, Va.....	Avis.....	Farmer and manufacturer of patent neck yoke and wagon.
Col. H. J. Williams.....	1853	Bath county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser. Trade, mechanic.
S. P. Strain.....	1865	Rockbridge county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farming and stock-raiser.
John B. Brownlee.....	1832	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Esos Ott.....	1817	Augusta county, Va.....	Moffatt's Creek.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Henry Wright.....	1829	Augusta county, Va.....	Moffatt's Creek.....	Farming and stock-raising.
Thomas M. Smiley.....	1842	Augusta county, Va.....	Moffatt's Creek.....	Farmer, miller and stock-raiser.
D. F. Miller.....	1836	Augusta county, Va.....	Moffatt's Creek.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
A. H. Steel.....	1838	Augusta county, Va.....	Moffatt's Creek.....	Farmer, grist mill and saw mill.
W. L. Martin.....	1838	Augusta county, Va.....	Moffatt's Creek.....	Farmer and stock-grower.
J. Frank Clemmer.....	1832	Augusta county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farmer and distiller.
Wm. B. Glover.....	1850	Augusta county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
G. Lewis Dull.....	1845	Augusta county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John F. Sheets.....	1848	Virginia.....	Arbor Hill.....	Farmer, builder and contractor.
James E. Beard.....	1821	Augusta county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Farmer and supt. of poor-farm.
Geo. W. Fauber.....	1826	Augusta county, Va.....	Arbor Hill.....	Farmer.
Wm. Gibson.....	1827	Augusta county, Va.....	Mini Spring.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. W. Evans.....	1863	York county, Pa.....	Mini Spring.....	Blacksmith and wagonmaker.
Matthew Pilsen.....	1799	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John T. Shields.....	1836	Augusta county, Va.....	Mini Spring.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Reuben Lambert.....	1815	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer. Trade, carpenter and joiner.
S. C. Echard.....	1838	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer. Has 103 acres of fine land for sale.
John W. Ott.....	1876	Shenandoah county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer.
John J. Larew.....	1828	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer, auctioneer and dealer in lumber and coal.
T. A. Brownlee.....	1856	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and teacher.
B. H. Palmer.....	1866	Rockingham Co., Va.....	Greenville.....	Mercant.
Isaac Newton.....	1821	Rockbridge county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Trade, hatter. Farmer.
J. W. Miah.....	1850	Augusta county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. P. Miah.....	1862	Augusta county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
A. A. Sproul.....	1831	Augusta county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. W. Hamilton.....	1860	Augusta county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. Alex. Bumgardner.....	1847	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and distiller.
J. S. Garrison.....	1836	Rockbridge county, Va.....	Middlebrook.....	Blacksmith and wagonmaker.
G. W. Shuey.....	1824	Augusta county, Va.....	Swoope.....	Farmer and stock-raiser and owner of saw mill.
W. H. Peyton.....	1851	Albemarle county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer.
W. H. Shields.....	1846	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
G. A. Shields.....	1849	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. A. Shields.....	1852	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. R. Haupe.....	1826	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-grower.
Col. J. D. Lilly.....	1841	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. Ran Smith.....	1854	Augusta county, Va.....	Greenville.....	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. W. Fauver.....	1828	Rockbridge county, Va.....	Vesuvius.....	Farmer and stock-raiser; 200 acres land in Rockbridge Co., Va., with tin ore mine; 440 acres in Nelson Co., Va., near tin and lead mine.

RIVER HEADS—CONTINUED.

NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
D. E. Ramsey	1800	Nelson county, Va.	Steele's Tavern	Farmer.
J. A. Hess	1804	Augusta county, Va.	Steele's Tavern.	Farmer and carriage and wagon maker.
E. F. Cannon	1811	Augusta county, Va.	Raphine Depot.	Farmer and stock dealer.
Geo. W. McClure	1823	Augusta county, Va.	Raphine Depot.	Farmer.
Geo. P. Lightner	1828	Augusta county, Va.	Raphine Depot.	Farmer.
Samuel A. Lightner	1812	Augusta county, Va.	Raphine Depot.	Farming.
W. T. Rosh	1819	Augusta county, Va.	Steele's Tavern.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John H. Rosh	1821	Augusta county, Va.	Steele's Tavern.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. D. McGuffin	1811	Augusta county, Va.	Steele's Tavern.	Farmer and merchant.
R. Tate Wallace	1814	Augusta county, Va.	Greenville.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
James W. Wallace	1844	Augusta county, Va.	Greenville.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
B. F. McClung	1833	Rockbridge county, Va.	Greenville.	Merchant miller and farmer.

NORTH RIVER DISTRICT.

NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
Joseph A. Whitmore	1810	Rockingham Co., Va.	Parnassus	Farmer and stock-dealer.
R. H. Dudley	1833	Augusta county, Va.	Parnassus	Farmer and stock-dealer.
Rev. R. C. Walker	1857	Rockbridge county, Va.	Lovers' Shops.	Presbyterian preacher.
J. M. H. Randolph	1857	Augusta county, Va.	Parnassus	Farmer and book-keeper.
Nathan Reeves	1824	Augusta county, Va.	Mount Solon.	Farmer and dealer in stock.
J. W. Billings	1834	Augusta county, Va.	Mount Solon.	Farmer and stock-grower.
M. Virginia Trevey	1841	Augusta county, Va.	Mount Solon.	Farming.
D. F. Mohler	1829	Augusta county, Va.	Mount Solon.	Farming and manufactory and dealer in lumber.
H. B. McFall	1830	Augusta county, Va.	Mount Solon.	Farmer.
J. A. Mills, Esq.	1830	Augusta county, Va.	Spring Hill.	Farmer and miller.
Samuel Forrer	1844	Page county, Va.	Mossy Creek.	Farmer and stock-dealer.
A. J. Dickerson	1826	Rockingham Co., Va.	Sangerville.	Farmer.
Martin Garber	1830	Rockingham Co., Va.	Sangerville.	Farmer.
John W. Crist	1841	Augusta county, Va.	Sangerville.	General merchandise.
Henry Phillip	1812	Augusta county, Va.	Sangerville.	Farmer and stock-dealer.
Capt. James H. Todd	1823	Augusta county, Va.	Mount Solon.	Farmer and stock-grower.
Martin S. Whitmore	1823	Augusta county, Va.	Parnassus	Farmer.
A. A. Crawford	1831	Augusta county, Va.	Parnassus	Farmer and dealer in stock.
John H. Billing	1847	Augusta county, Va.	Parnassus	Merchant and farmer.
W. E. Wright	1841	Augusta county, Va.	Parnassus	Shoemaker, boots and shoes made to order.

MIDDLE RIVER DISTRICT.

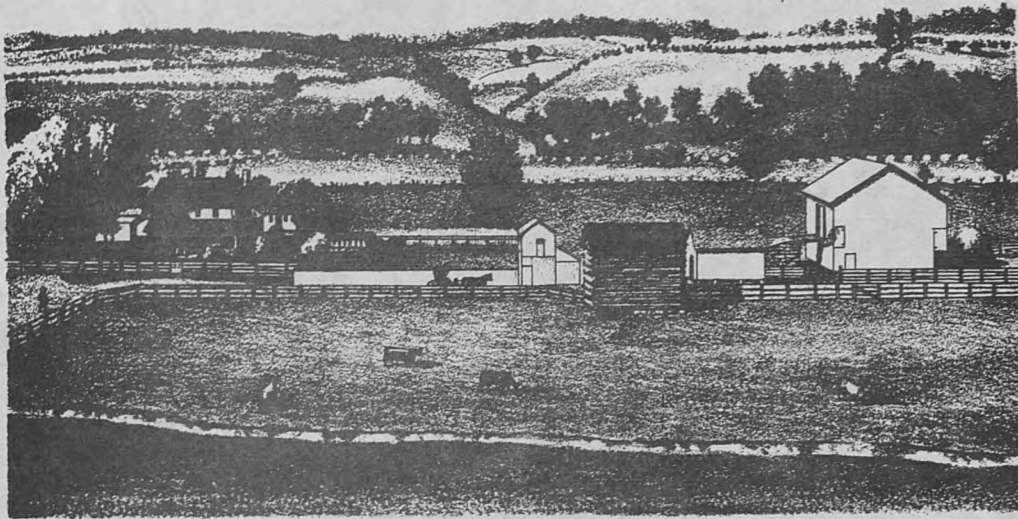
NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
D. K. Shrockhise	1839	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John W. Leades	1839	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Samuel Carrell	1834	Virginia	Weyer's Cave.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Samuel Crickenberger	1829	Virginia	Weyer's Cave.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
L. M. Crickenberger	1830	Virginia	Weyer's Cave.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. E. Skelton	1823	Virginia	Weyer's Cave.	Farmer and blacksmith.
John Wampler	1831	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Farmer and stock-raiser.
M. H. Shaver	1847	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Farmer, miller and stock-raiser.
John L. Shaver	1859	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Jacob A. Whitmore	1847	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Joseph Glick	1844	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Fred. K. Cline	1857	Virginia	Weyer's Cave.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Geo. S. Roller	1846	Virginia	Weyer's Cave.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Samuel Byers	1837	Virginia	Burke's Mills.	Farmer and horse-dealer.
John Seawright	1815	Virginia	Stonewall	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Geo. Seawright	1818	Virginia	Stonewall	Farmer, miller and merchant.
Cyrus Brown	1814	Virginia	Stonewall	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Nollerus Koerner	1827	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Dr. James B. Stout	1839	Virginia	New Hope	Physician and surgeon.
James T. Kerr	1844	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
H. Shesby Koller	1854	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Teacher of classical school and county supt. of schools.
Isaac Keister	1871	Virginia	Rolla	Farmer and stock-raiser.
S. H. Tutwiler	1877	Virginia	Rolla	Farmer and stock-raiser.
E. T. Dudley	1856	Virginia	Fort Defiance	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Geo. B. Crawford	1842	Virginia	Fort Defiance	Farmer and merchant.
Maj. Wm. M. Wilson	1828	Virginia	Fort Defiance	Farmer and stock-raiser.
T. A. Jordan	1878	Virginia	Fort Defiance	Farmer and general dealer.
E. Mark McCue	1860	Virginia	Fort Defiance	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Mrs. Elizabeth McCue	1824	Virginia	Fort Defiance	Farmer.
Robert C. Byers	1846	Virginia	Fort Defiance	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Jacob F. Miller	1851	Virginia	Mount Sidney	Farmer and stock-raiser.
G. Alex. Mowry	1849	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and horse-dealer.
W. R. Talley	1853	Virginia	Koerner's Store.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Ireatus Koerner	1830	Virginia	Koerner's Store.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Rev. Daniel Yount	1822	Virginia	Koerner's Store.	Minister and farmer.
Samuel Yount	1846	Virginia	Koerner's Store.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Henry Koerner	1829	Virginia	Koerner's Store.	Farmer, distiller, miller and stock dealer.
David Yount, Sr.	1814	Virginia	Koerner's Store.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
David Wise	1834	Virginia	Hermitage	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Miss Barbara Shusey	1830	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer.
John A. Stover	1843	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Alexander Kerr	1829	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Isaac Coffman	1828	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
S. J. Garber	1824	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
H. K. Eakle	1818	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.

MIDDLE RIVER DISTRICT—CONTINUED.

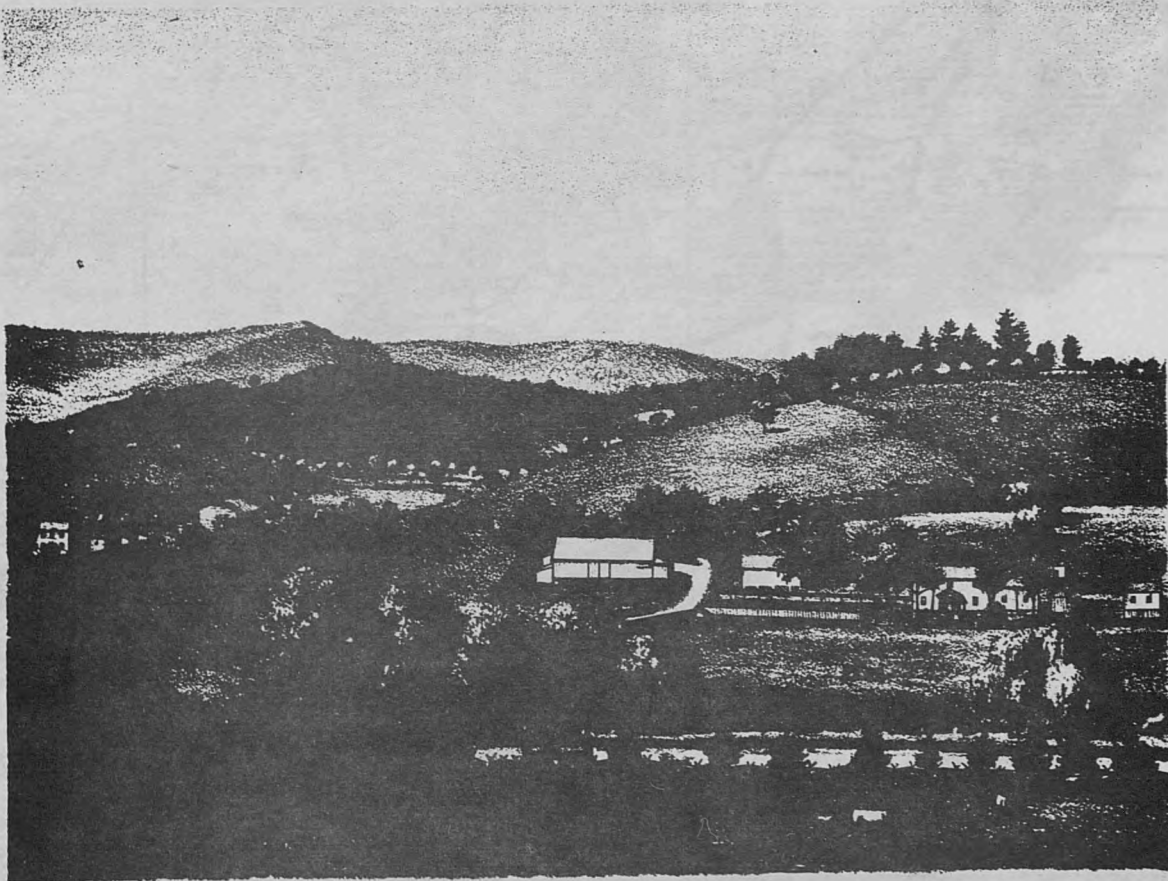
NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
Isaac S. Myers	1822	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
D. Beard	1829	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and distiller.
Col. John H. Crawford	1822	Virginia	Fort Defiance.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Wm. B. Crawford	1824	Virginia	New Hope.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
H. B. Christian, M.D.	1843	Virginia	Weyer's Cave.	Physician and surgeon.
Wm. Thos. Johnston	1828	Virginia	Mt. Meridian.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Col. S. D. Crawford	1830	Virginia	Mt. Meridian.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
B. J. Craig	1832	Virginia	Mt. Meridian.	Farmer and stock-raiser.
T. F. Hoy	1833	Virginia	Mt. Meridian.	Farmer, merchant and miller.
Wm. Patterson	1830	Virginia	Harrison	Farmer and stock-raiser.
C. S. Patterson	1835	Virginia	Harrison	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Christin Eakle	1828	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Franklin Barger	1831	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and stock-raiser.
S. Newton Patterson	1840	Virginia	New Hope	Farmer and revenue commissioner.

SOUTH RIVER DISTRICT.

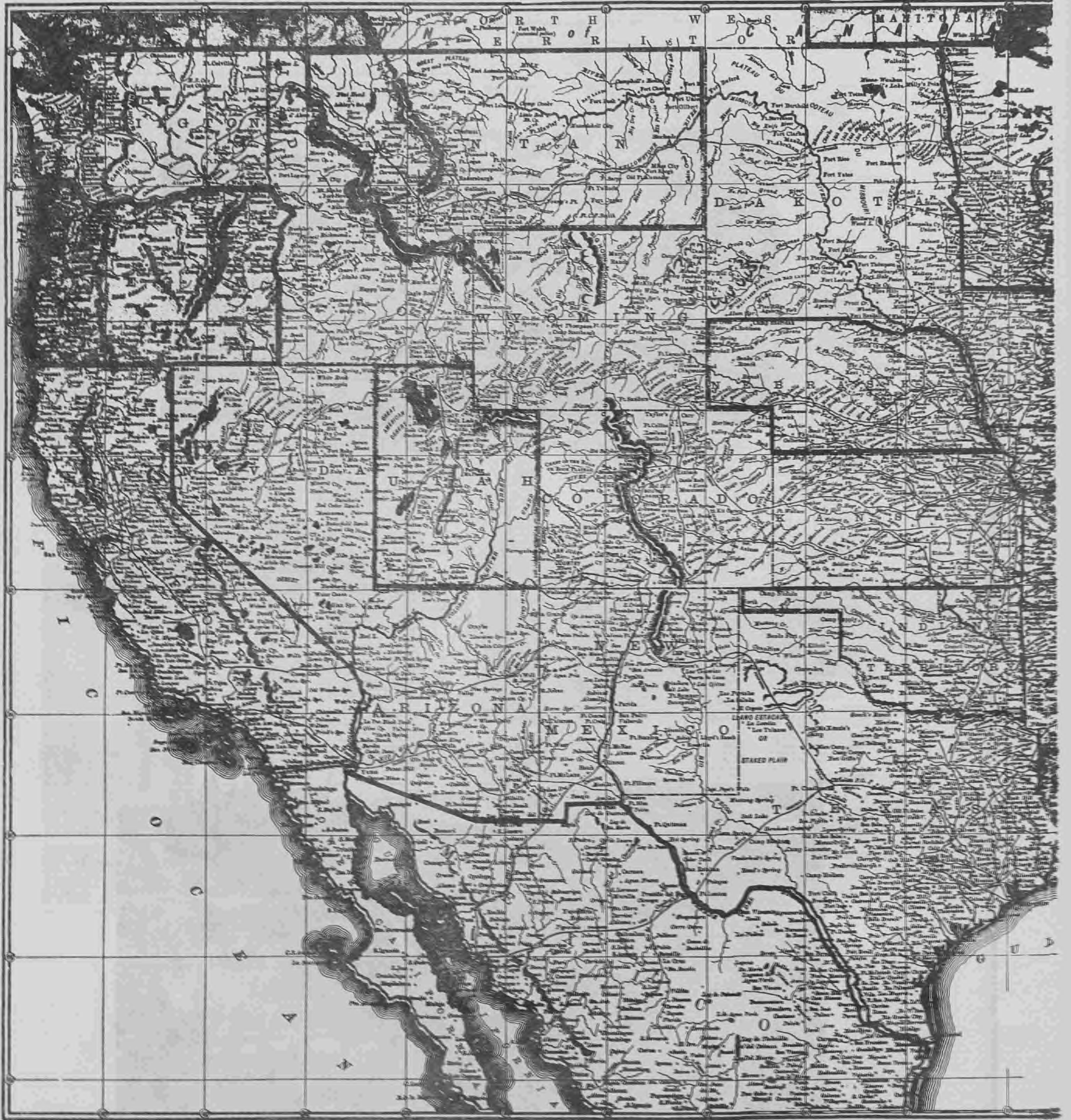
NAME.	Date of settlement.	Nativity.	Postoffice.	Occupation.
Wm. G. Hildebrand	1855	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
G. W. C. Karnes	1879	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and fruit-grower.
H. H. Hamilton	1830	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and fruit-grower.
H. A. S. Hamilton	1848	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and breeder of South-down and Cotswold sheep.
W. F. Brand	1840	Virginia	Staunton	Merchant miller.
Geo. E. Schmucker	1865	Virginia	Staunton	Farmer and merchant.
John E. Hamilton	1838	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John S. Hamilton	1839	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. B. McComb	1809	Augusta county, Va.	Stuart's Draft	Farmer.
John P. Cline	1882	Rockingham county, Va.	Lyndhurst	Farmer, 330 acres of fine land with good buildings for sale.
J. H. Rankin	1842	Augusta county, Va.	Stuart's Draft	Merch' & manufact' wool'n g'ds
James McComb	1835	Augusta county, Va.	Stuart's Draft	Farmer and stock-grower.
Wm. B. Kramer	1841	Frederick county, Md.	Stuart's Draft	Farmer. Trade, bricklayer.
John S. Hodge	1838	Rockbridge county, Va.	Stuart's Draft	Farmer.
A. H. Kindig	1818	Lancaster county, Pa.	Fishersville	Farming and stock-growing.
Jacob Forrer	1842	Page county, Va.	Stuart's Draft	Farmer, stock-raiser & fruit-grower
James M. Brooks	1826	Augusta county, Va.	Greenville	Farming and stock-raising.
Geo. F. Keiser	1839	Augusta county, Va.	Avila	Farmer and stock-raiser.
U. V. Abney	1838	Augusta county, Va.	Folly Mills	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. G. Abney	1840	Augusta county, Va.	Folly Mills	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. W. Churchman	1836	Augusta county, Va.	Folly Mills	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John S. Churchman	1837	Augusta county, Va.	Folly Mills	Farmer and stock-raiser.
R. W. Moffit	1841	Augusta county, Va.	Folly Mills	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. L. Van Lear	1819	Augusta county, Va.	Folly Mills	Farmer and stock-raiser.
L. F. Van Lear	1824	Augusta county, Va.	Folly Mills	Farmer and stock-raiser.
A. G. Christian	1833	Augusta county, Va.	Mini Spring	Farmer and stock-grower.
J. E. Harnsberger	1868	Rockbridge county, Va.	Stuart's Draft	Farmer and dairy.
H. C. Carter	1851	Cumberland county, Va.	Staunton	Farmer and stock-trader.
G. W. Kolner	1852	Augusta county, Va.	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. H. Stump	1878	Burkley county, W. Va.	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
R. W. Murray	1868	Virginia	Fishersville	Physician and surgeon.
W. B. Patterson	1838	Augusta county, Va.	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-grower.
Adam McChesney	1839	Virginia	Stuart's Draft	Farmer and stock-dealer.
I. M. Watson, M.D.	1839	Virginia	Fishersville	Physician and farmer.
John T. Smith	1846	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Benj. F. Coyner	1852	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
S. Ellis	1839	Virginia	Lyndhurst	Farmer and stock-raiser.
W. H. Groom	1823	Virginia	Fishersville	Prop. Augusta hotel, Fishersville.
James K. Kemper	1879	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
C. Benton Coyner	1842	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
A. H. McCue	1842	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John D. Miller	1846	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
A. G. McCune	1838	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. McClanahan	1825	Kentucky	Fishersville	Farmer.
M. A. McComb	1837	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Mrs. H. G. Guthrie	1816	Virginia	Fishersville	Farming.
Wm. Guthrie	1795	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
John W. Paul	1856	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Rev. E. L. Brower	1831	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Minister and farmer.
G. W. Dudley & Son	1870	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Pub. of <i>Waynesboro' Messenger</i> .
G. W. Dudley	1879	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Civil engineer.
Dr. W. J. Jones	1867	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Physician and druggist.
J. A. Patterson, Jr.	1813	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Merchant miller.
J. H. Antrill	1833	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Merchant.
Lambert Bros.	1834	Virginia	Waynesboro'	M'n'fr furniture & b'ldg mat'l
M. L. Leonard	1839	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and member of Leonard & Fishburne, dealers in agricultural implements.
H. H. Shackelford	1866	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Carriage and wagon manufact'.
Cornelius Colner	1846	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
G. Julian Pratt	1846	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. A. Austin	1846	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Retired farmer.
A. W. Morris	1880	New York	Waynesboro'	Civil engineer.
J. W. Brownell	1832	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Thresher and lumber dealer.
Geo. K. Colner	1848	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and miller.
J. S. Wallace	1843	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Insurance agent.
Dr. W. A. Jones	1868	Mississippi	Waynesboro'	Dentist.
Col. J. Marshall McCue	1816	Virginia	Fishersville	Farmer.
Wm. F. Harner	1833	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and lumber dealer.
John J. Harner	1849	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Chas. M. Patrick	1830	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Geo. W. Layman	1830	Maryland	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Jas. E. Bush	1821	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock.
L. P. Blackwell	1859	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Merchant miller.
W. N. Fishburne	1856	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Leonard & Fishburne, dealers in agricultural implements.
John F. Leonard	1838	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
J. H. Shirey	1824	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
Marion Koerner	1841	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
A. D. Coyner	1847	Virginia	Waynesboro'	Farmer and stock-raiser.
G. B. Stuart	1834	Virginia	Lyndhurst	Farmer and miller.



RESIDENCE OF HENRY B. SIEG, PASTURES DIST, AUGUSTA CO, VA.



RESIDENCE OF JOHN BROWN, PASTURES DIST, AUGUSTA CO, VA.





VICINITY OF PHILADELPHIA.
PHILADELPHIA
MOORESBURG

PLAN OF NEW YORK.
NEW YORK
ALBANY

PLAN OF WASHINGTON, D.C.
WASHINGTON
GEORGETOWN

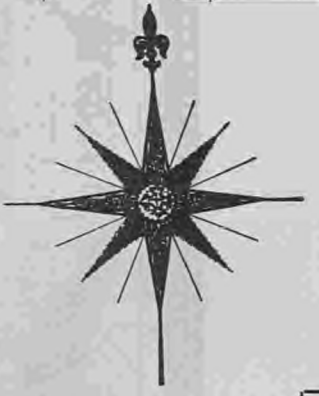
MAP OF THE

United States.

F O R M E R I C A

A T L A N T I C

E A S T



London: Wm. Wood & Co. 1854

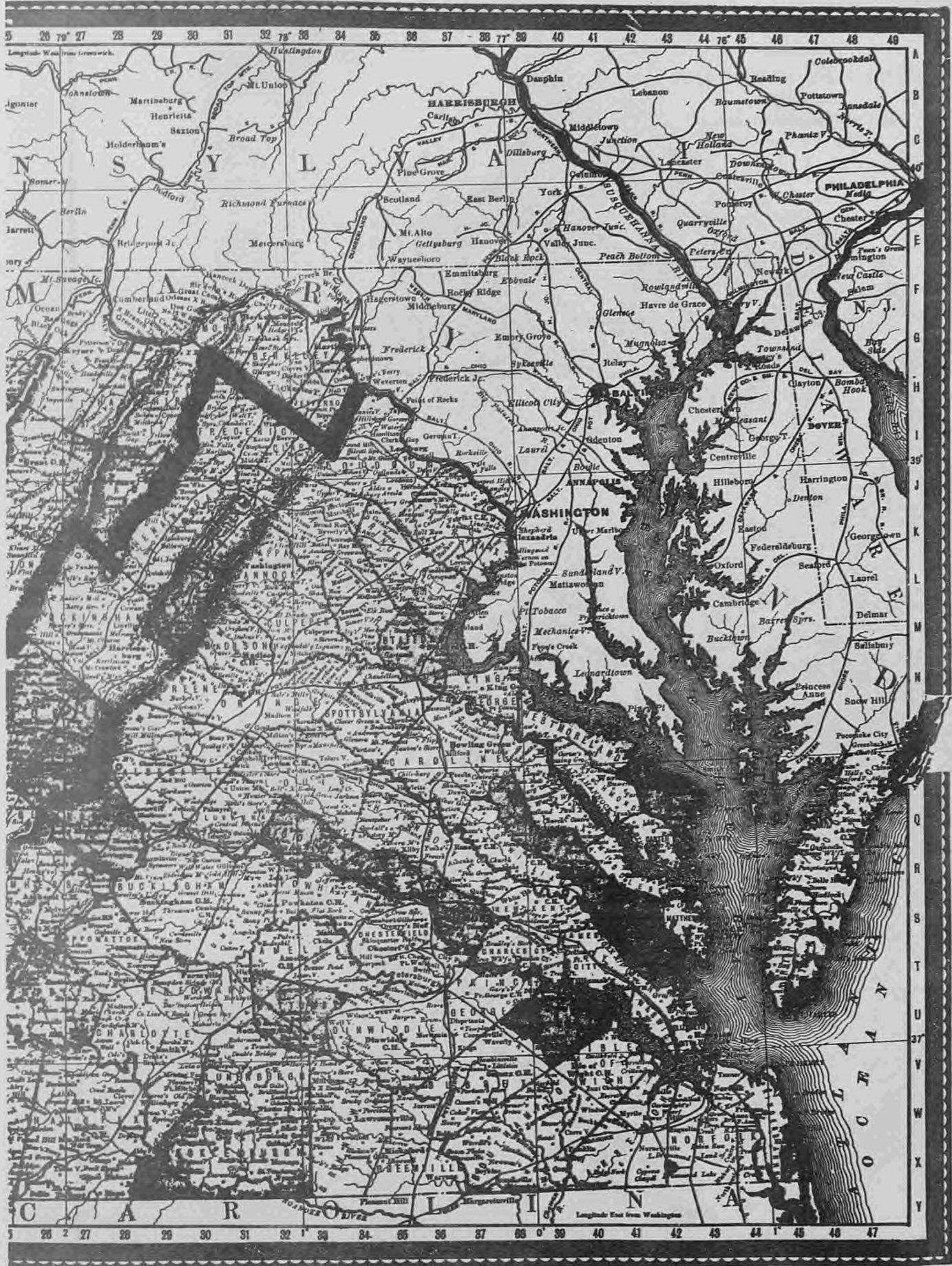
VIRGINIA AND WEST VIRGINIA

Statute Miles 69.16 to 1 degree.



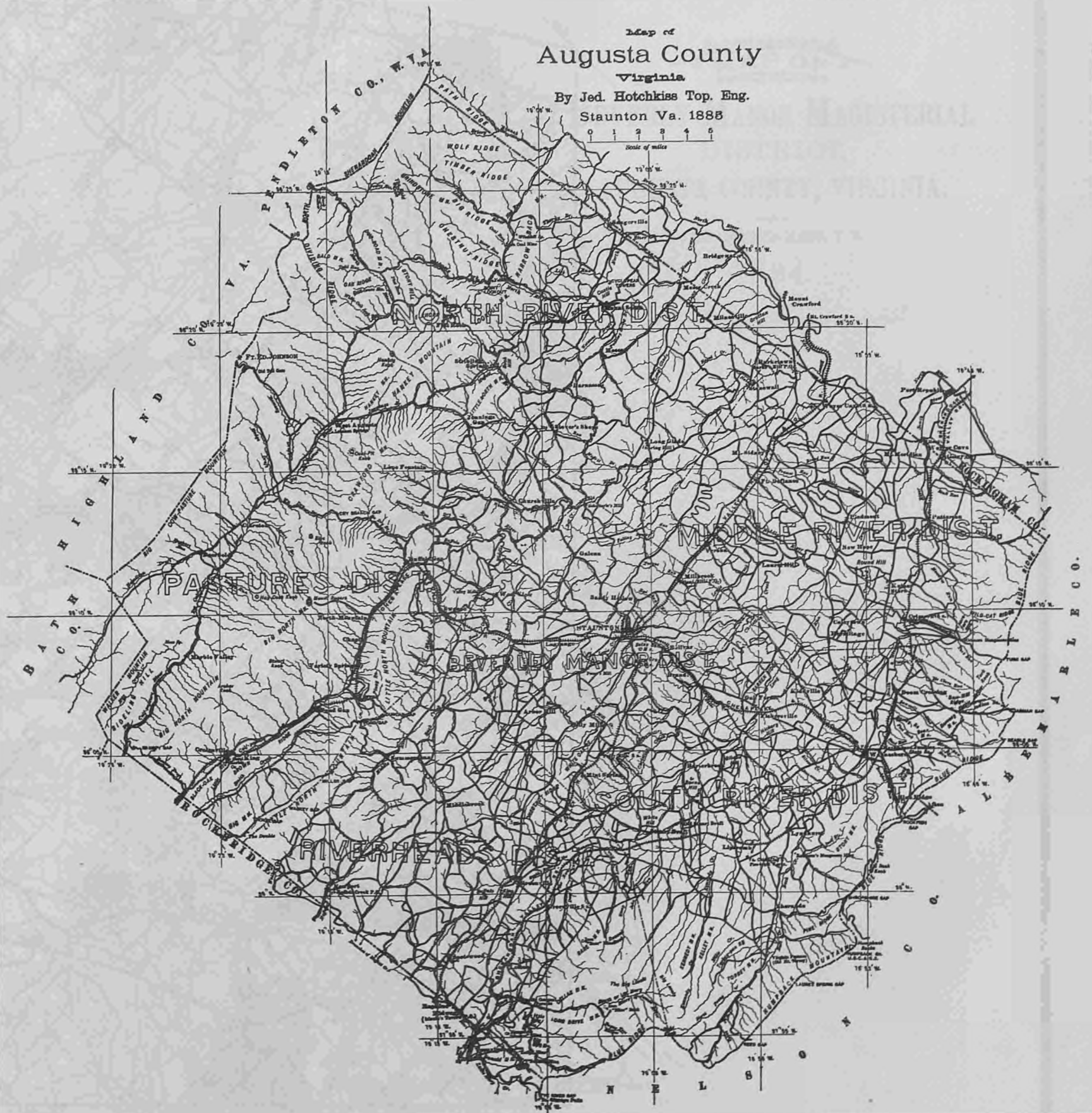
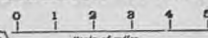
Longitude West from Washington.

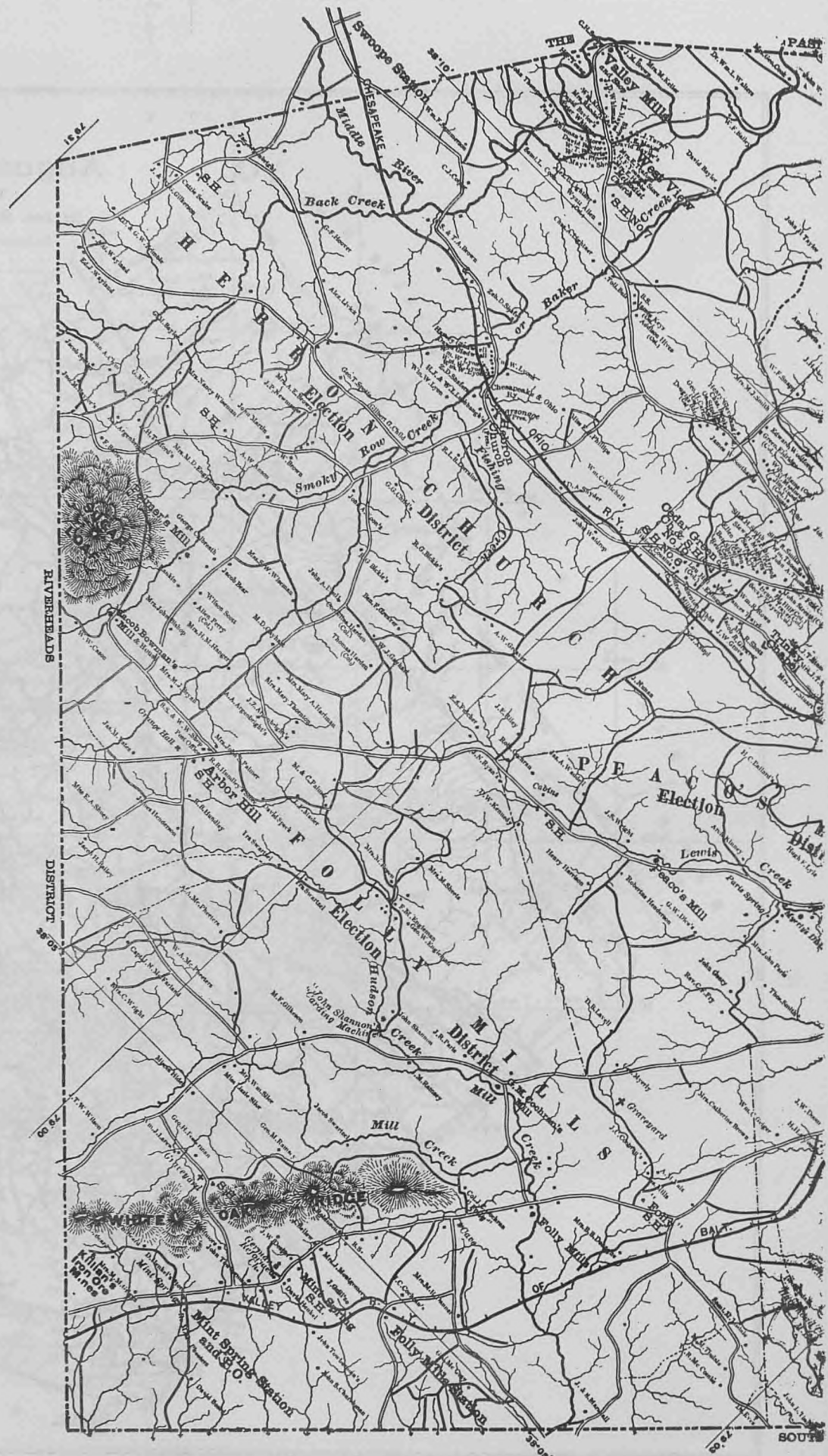
Rand, McNally & Co., Chicago.

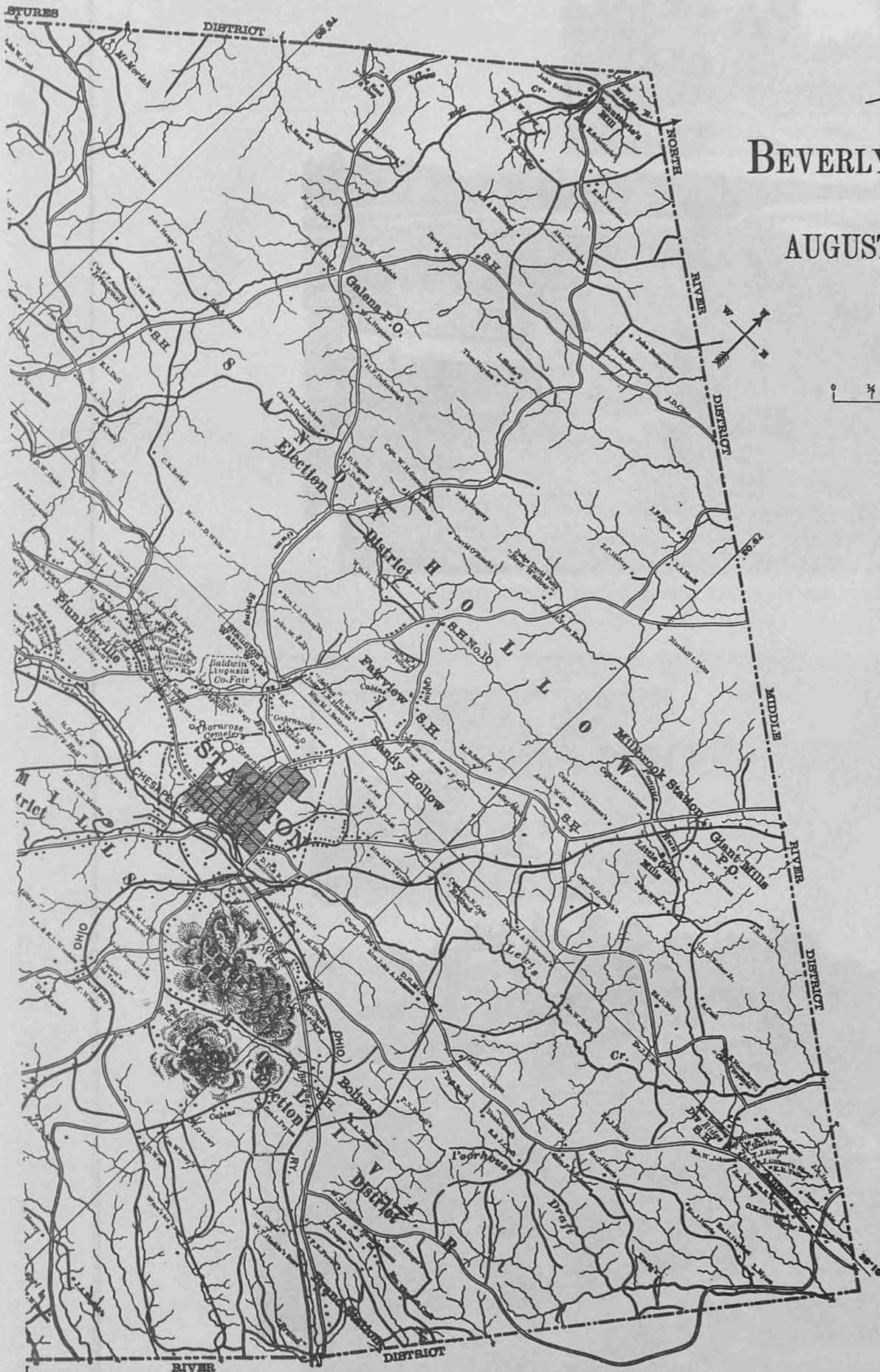


Map of
Augusta County
Virginia

By Jed. Hotchkiss Top. Eng.
Staunton Va. 1888





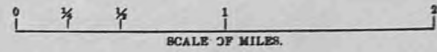


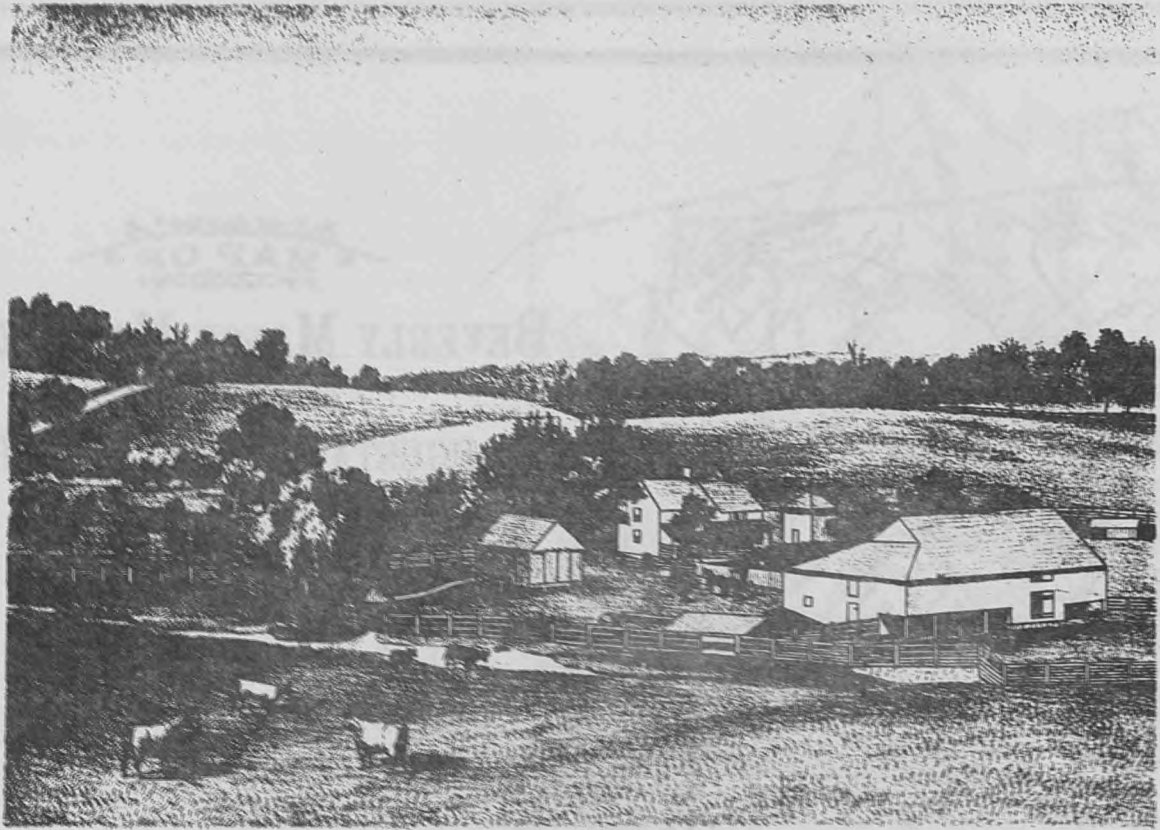
MAP OF

BEVERLY MANOR MAGISTERIAL
DISTRICT,
AUGUSTA COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

—BY—
JED. HOTCHKISS, T. E.

1884.

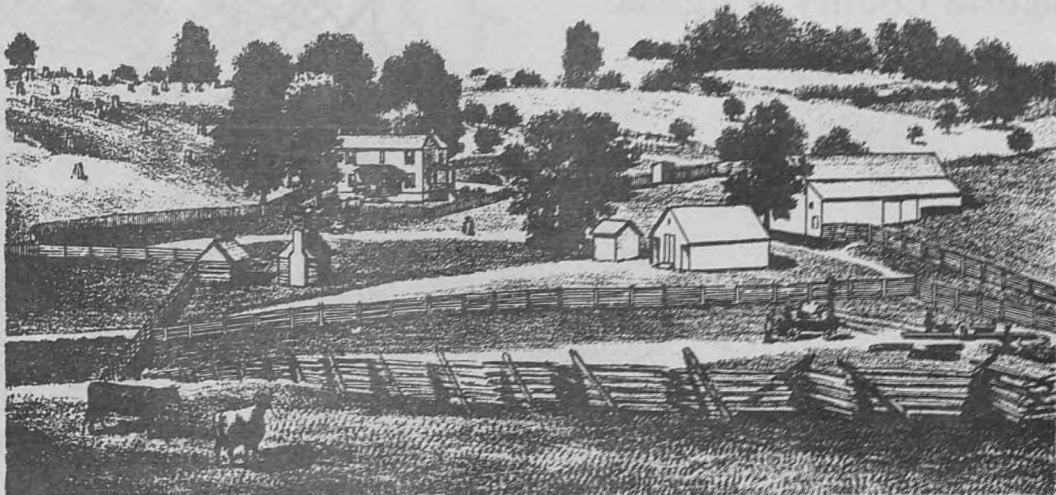




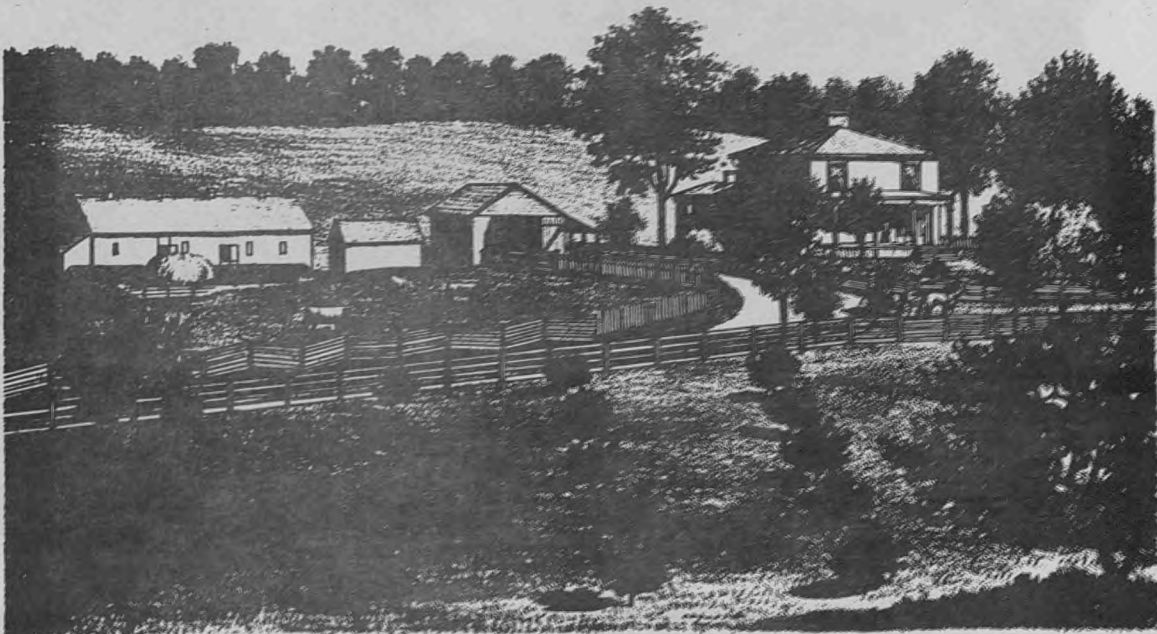
RESIDENCE OF J. S. HAWPE, RIVER-HEADS DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.



CEDAR HILL, RESIDENCE OF JOHN SEAWRIGHT, MIDDLE RIVER DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF D. C. RAMSEY, RIVER-HEADS DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.

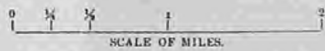


RESIDENCE OF H. J. WILLIAMS, RIVER-HEADS DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.

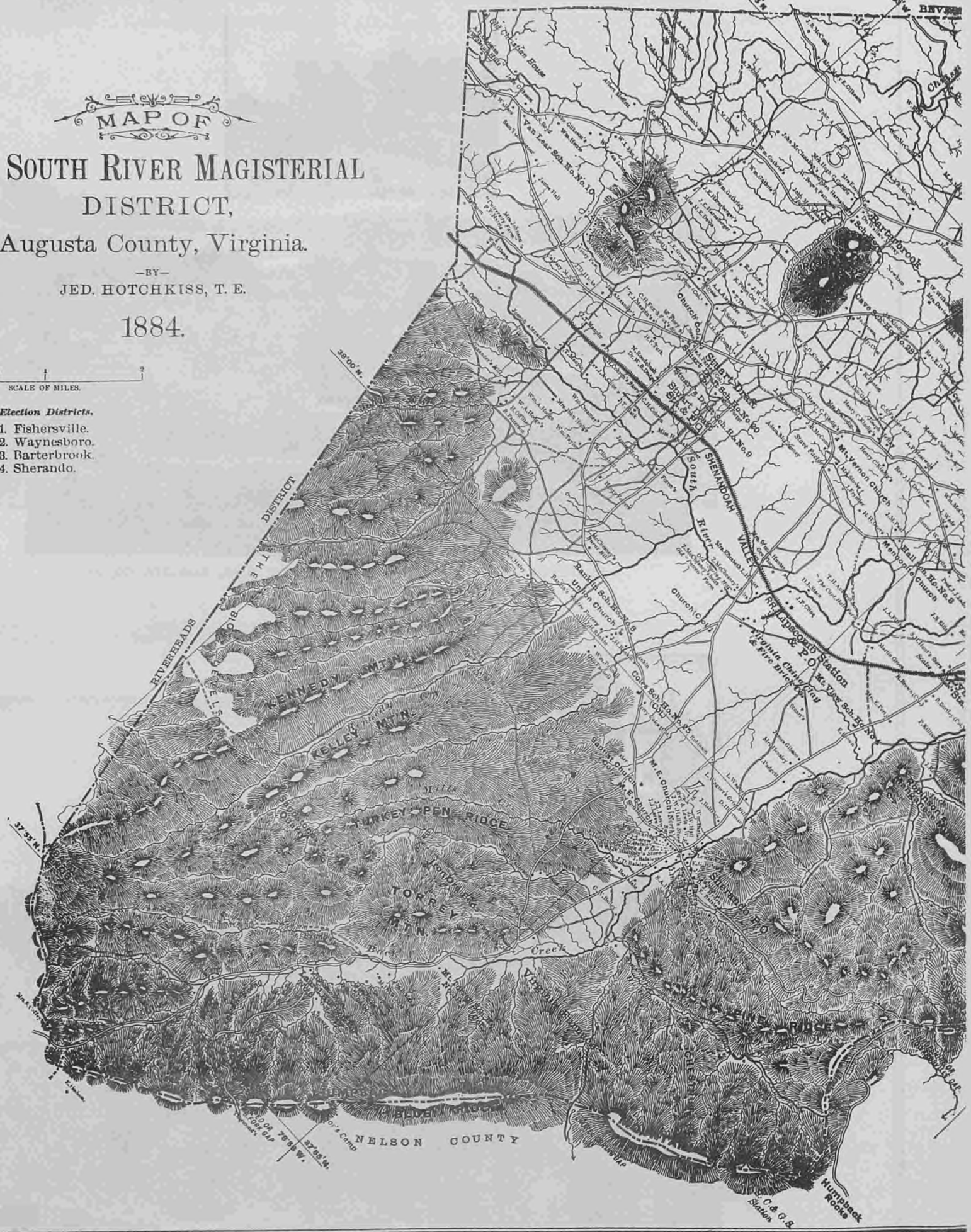

MAP OF
THE SOUTH RIVER MAGISTERIAL
DISTRICT,
 Augusta County, Virginia.

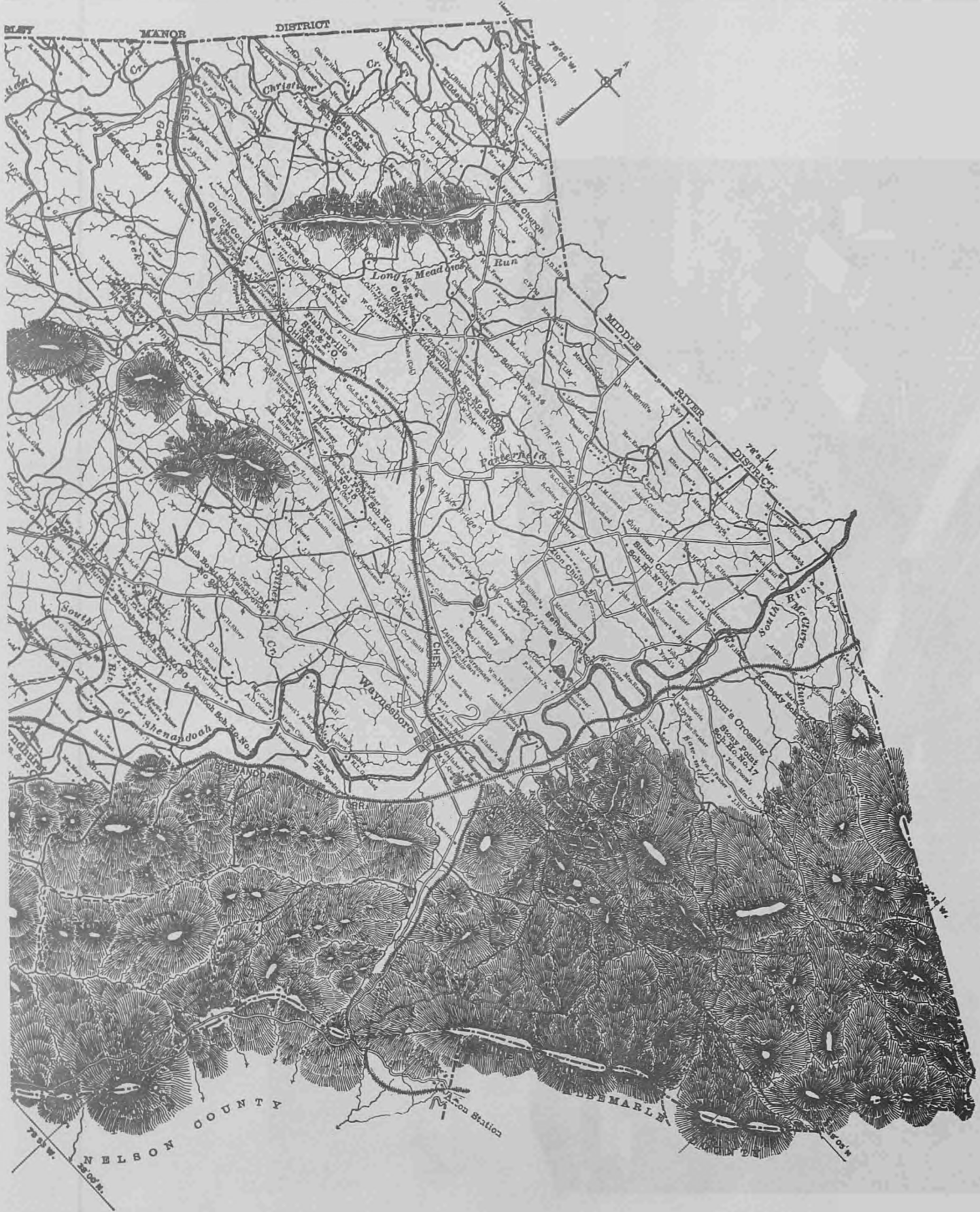
—BY—
 JED. HOTCHKISS, T. E.

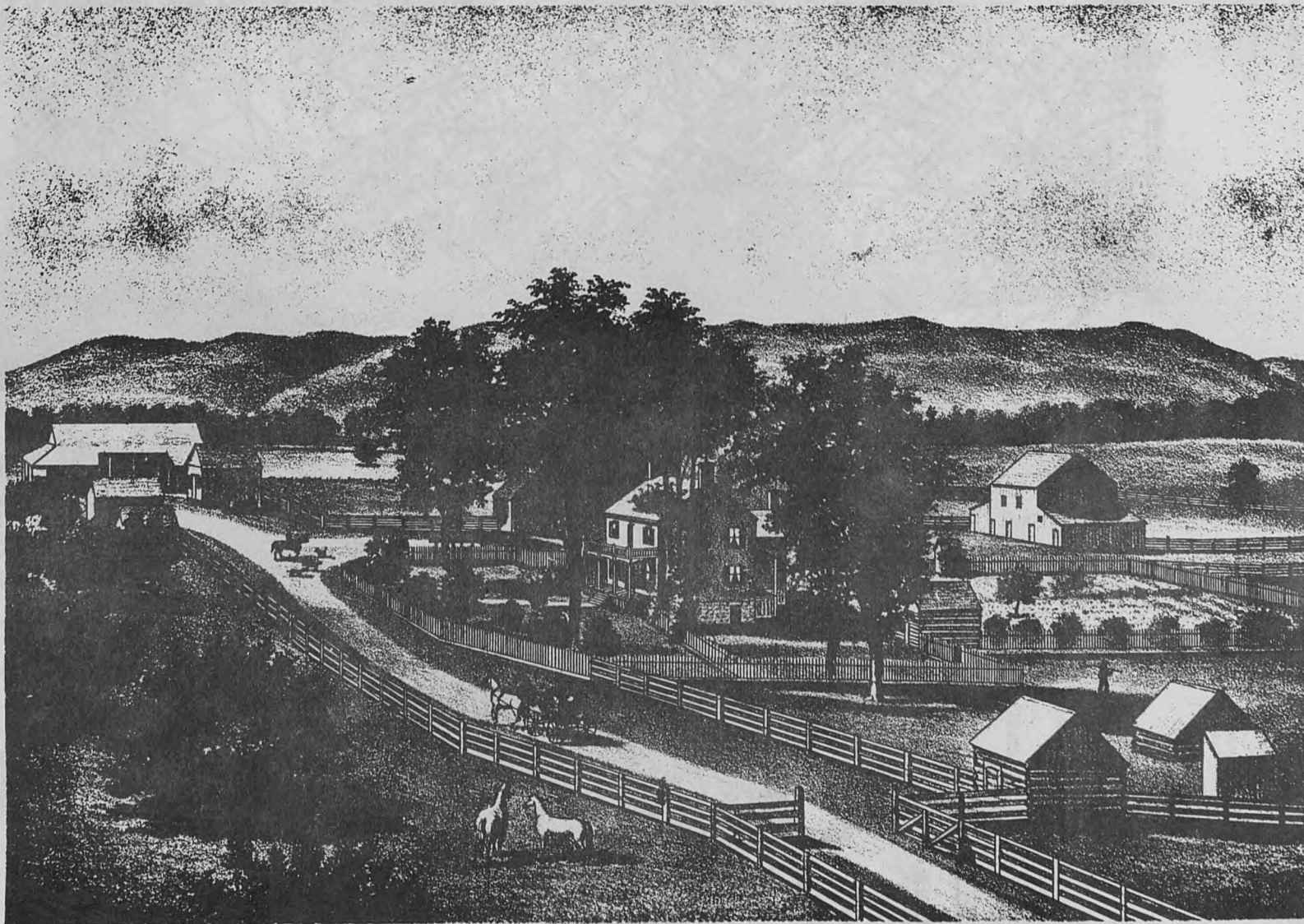
1884.



- Election Districts.*
1. Fishersville.
 2. Waynesboro.
 3. Barterbrook.
 4. Sherando.





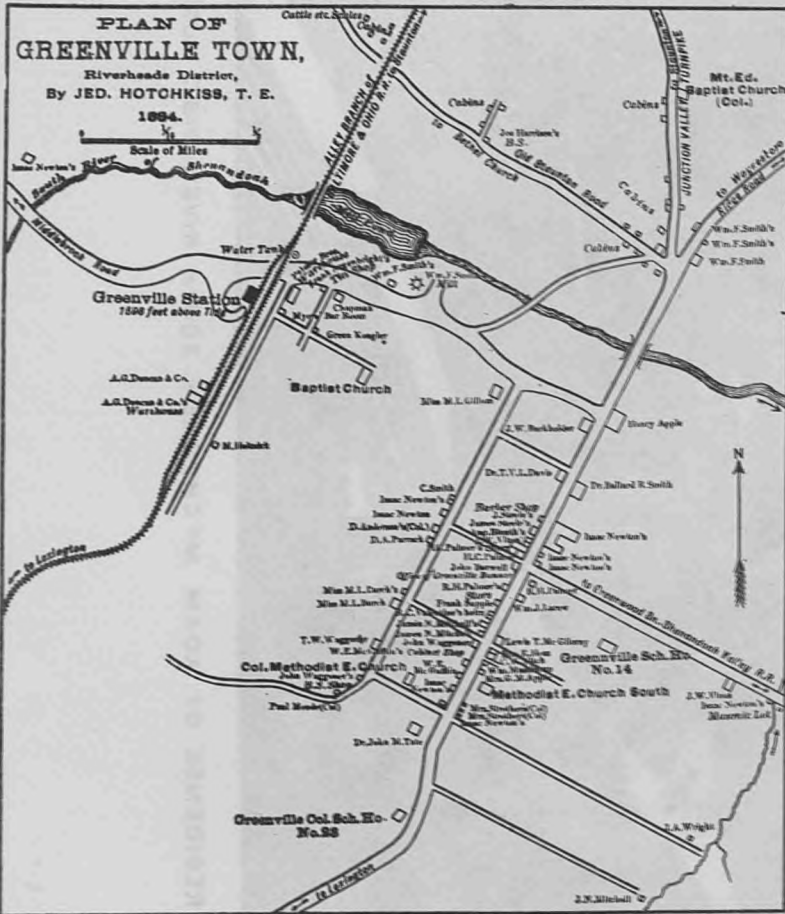
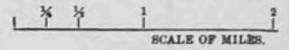


RESIDENCE OF ADAM M^cCHESNEY, SOUTH RIVER DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.

MAP OF
RIVERHEADS MAGISTERS
AUGUSTA COUNTY

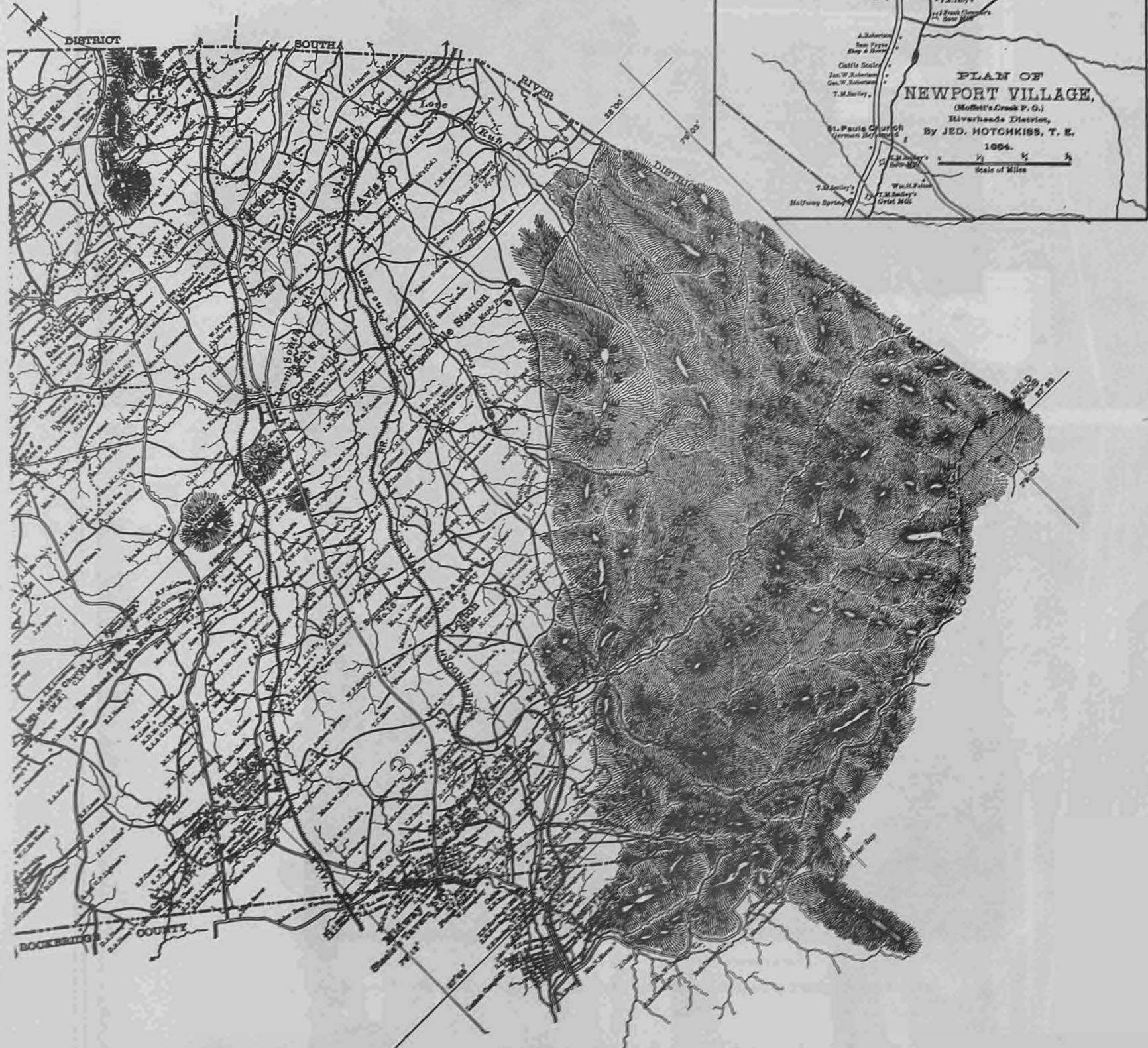
By JED. HOTCHKI

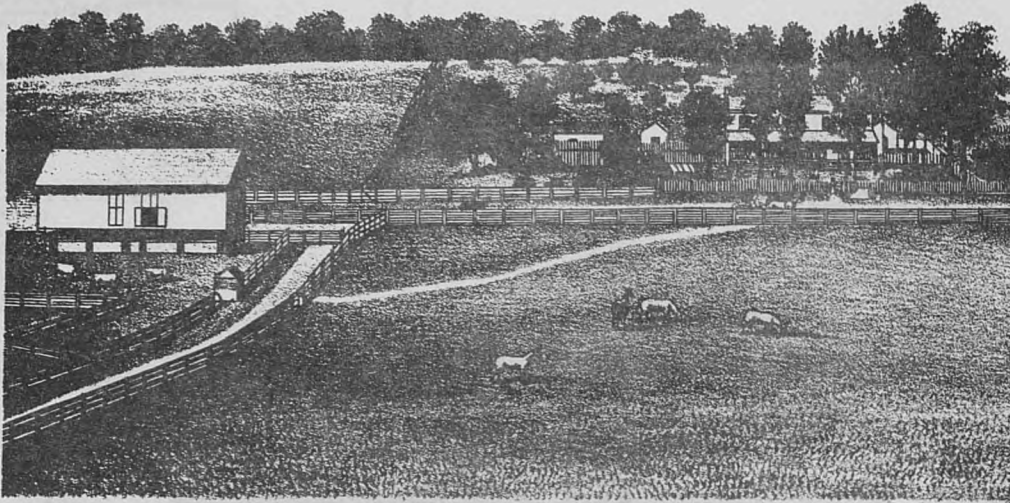
1884.



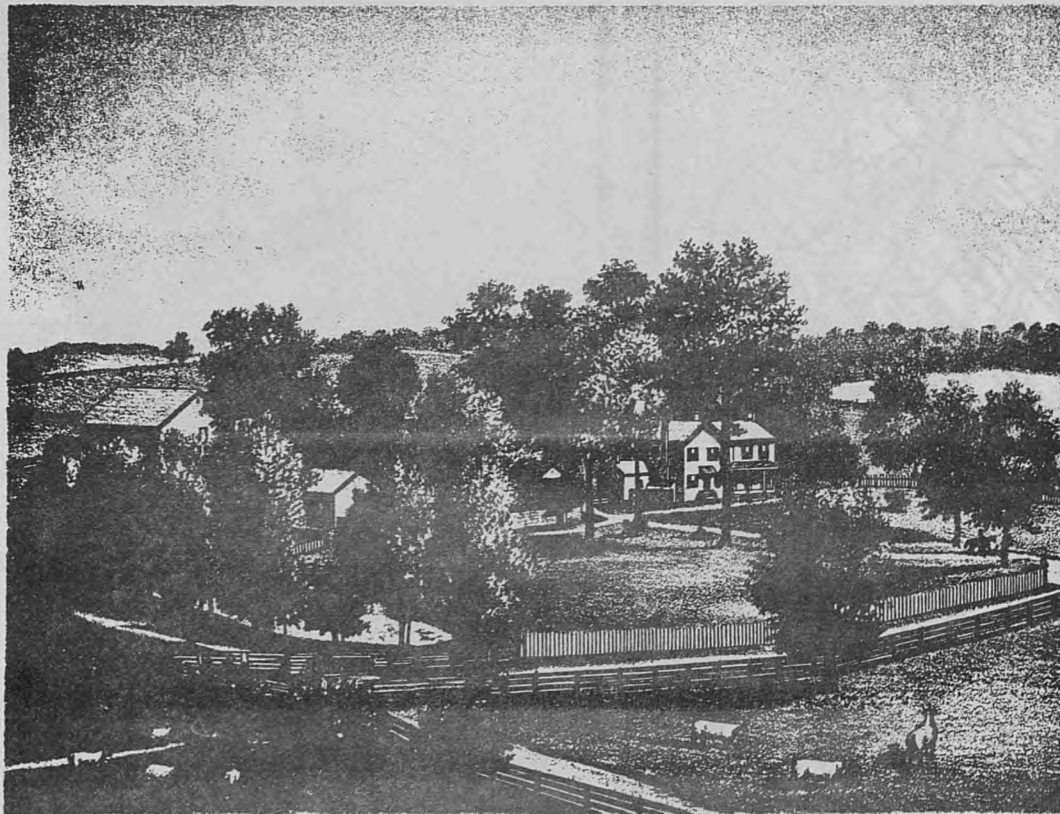
**AERIAL DISTRICT,
Y, VIRGINIA.
1884, T. E.**

- ELECTION DISTRICTS.**
1. Greenville.
 2. Middlebrook.
 3. Midway.
 4. Newport.



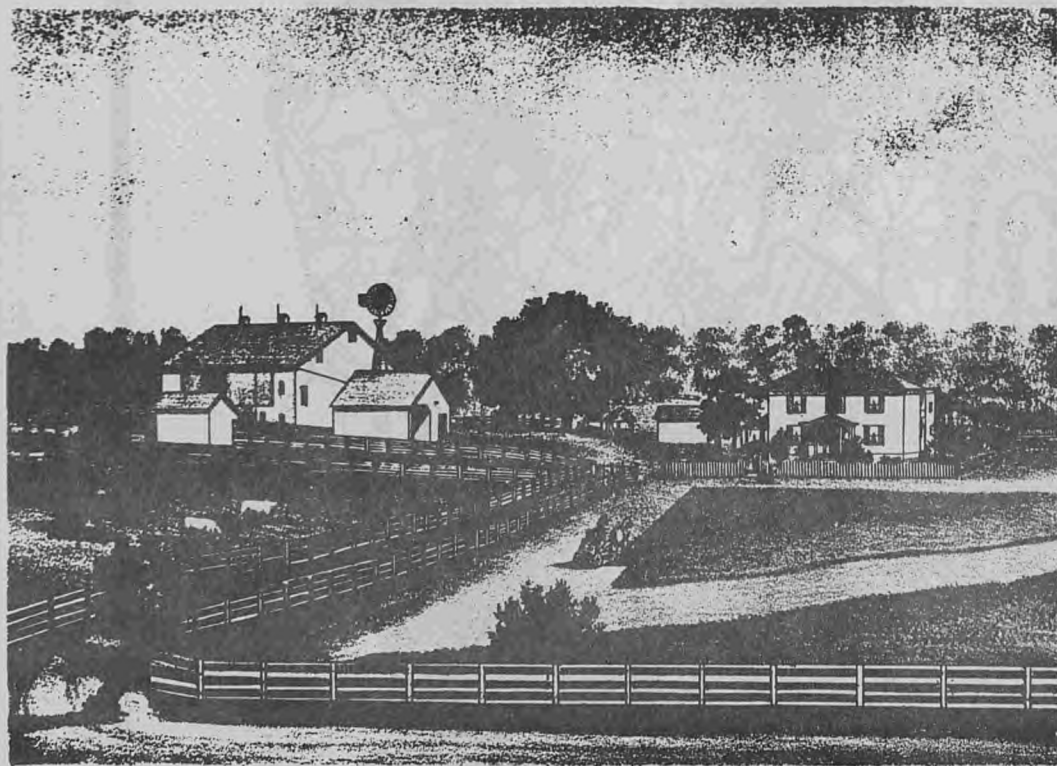


RESIDENCE OF T. F. HOY, MIDDLE RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.

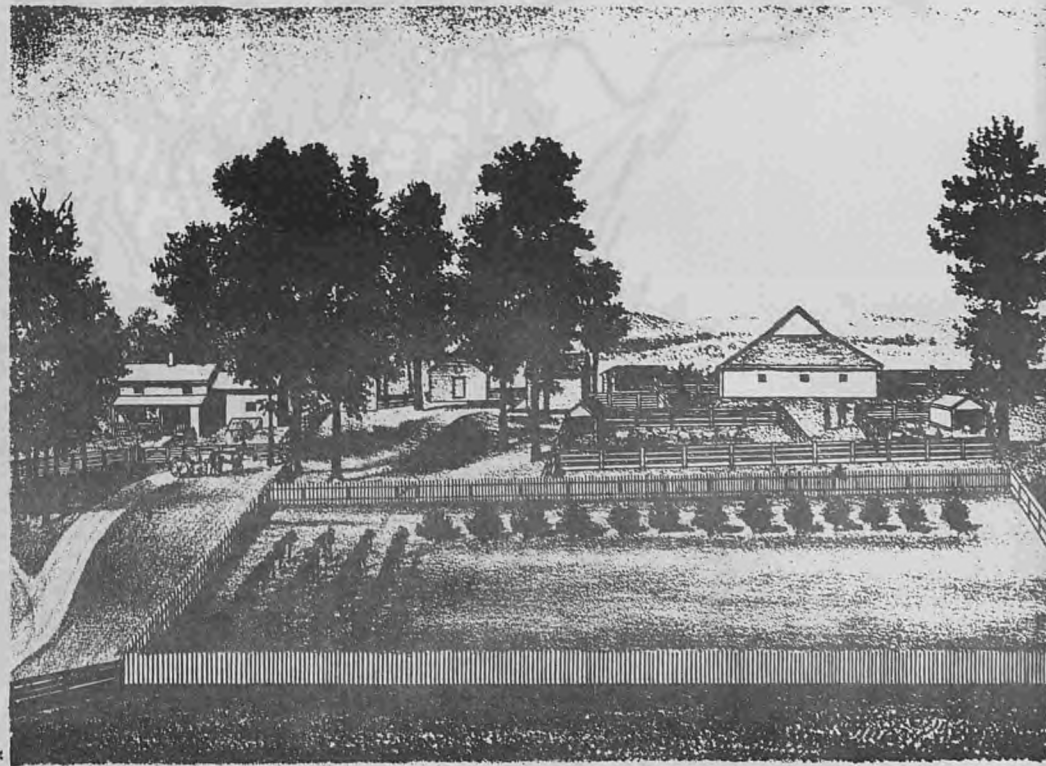


"WALNUT GROVE STOCK FARM."

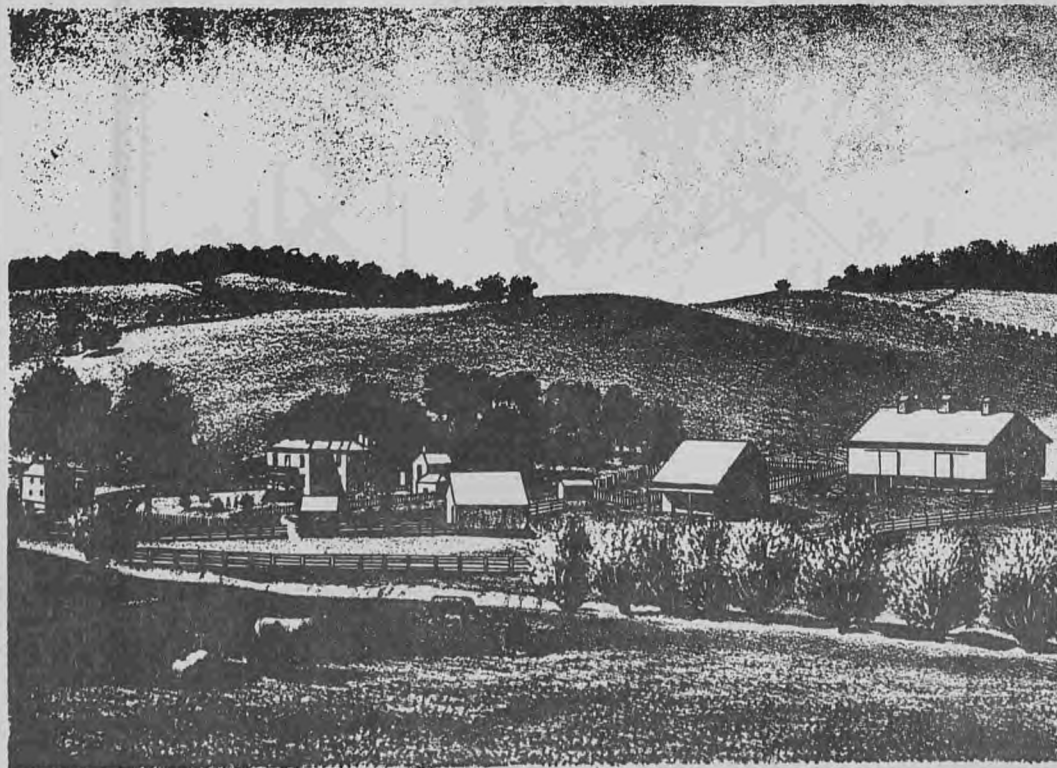
RESIDENCE OF CAPT. G. JULIAN PRATT, SOUTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



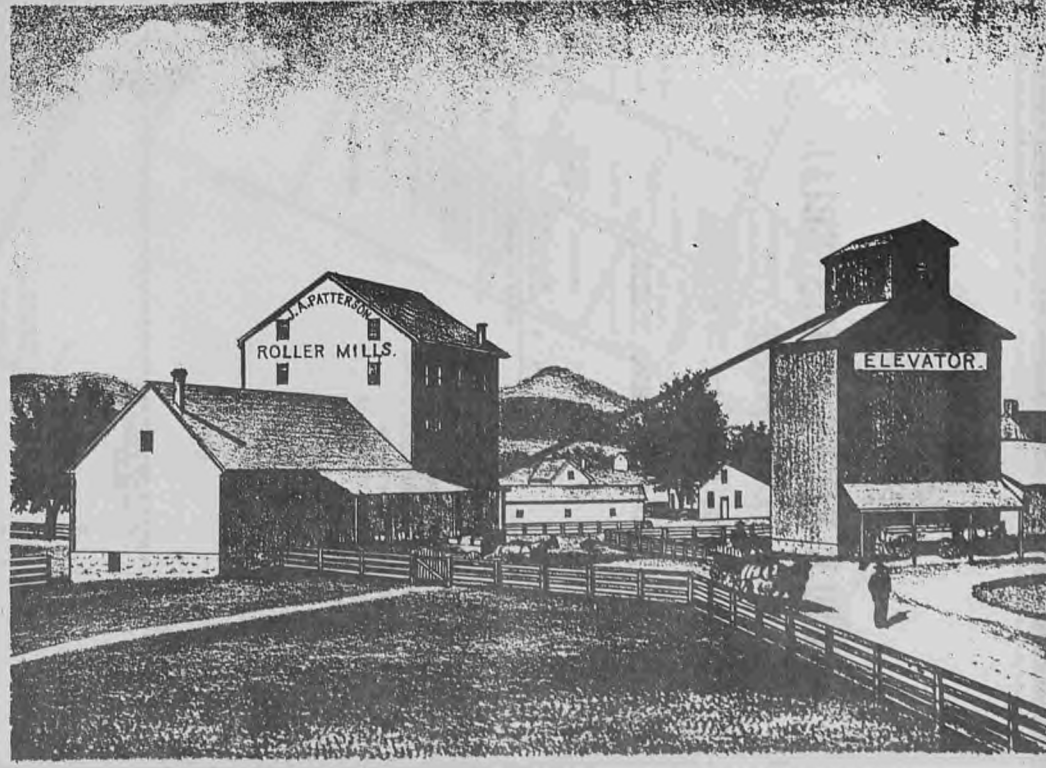
RESIDENCE OF A.H. KINDIG, SOUTH RIVER DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF H.A.S. HAMILTON, SOUTH RIVER DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF ENOS OTT, RIVER HEADS DIST., AUGUSTA CO., VA.



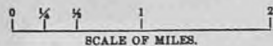
ROLLER FLOURING MILLS, J.A. PATTERSON JR., PROP., WAYNESBORO, VA.



MIDDLE RIVER MAGISTERIAL DISTRICT, Augusta County, Virginia.

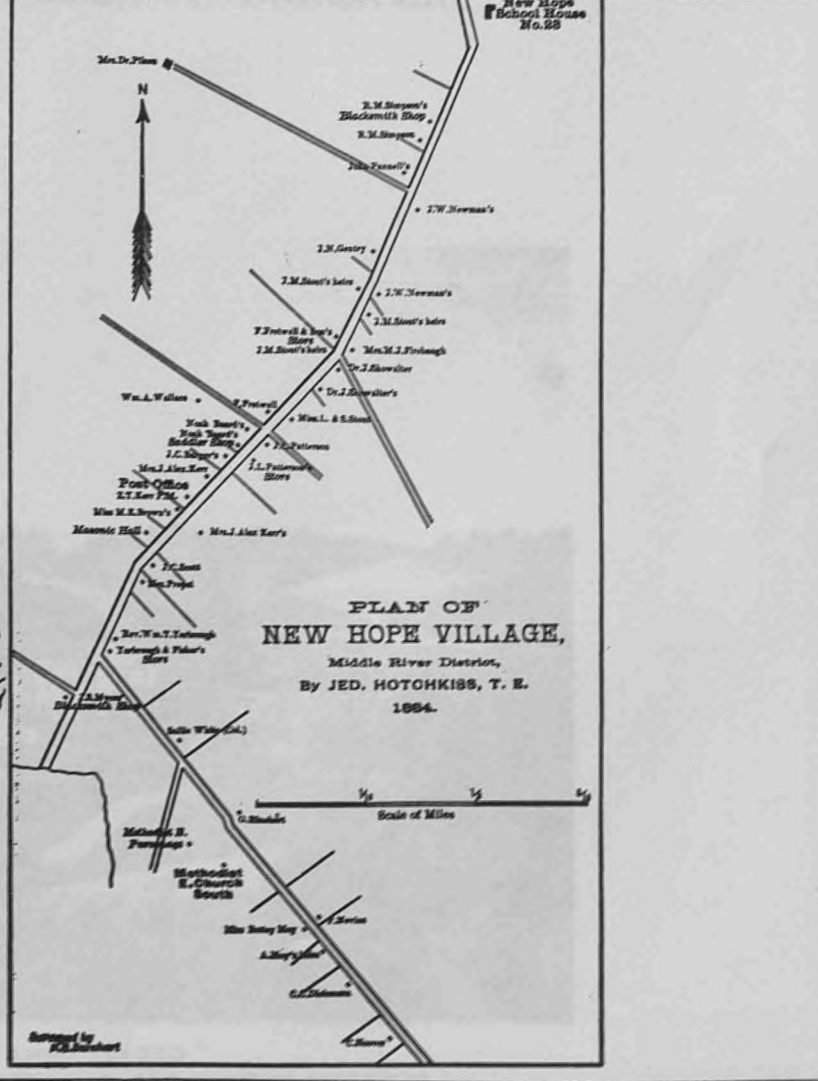
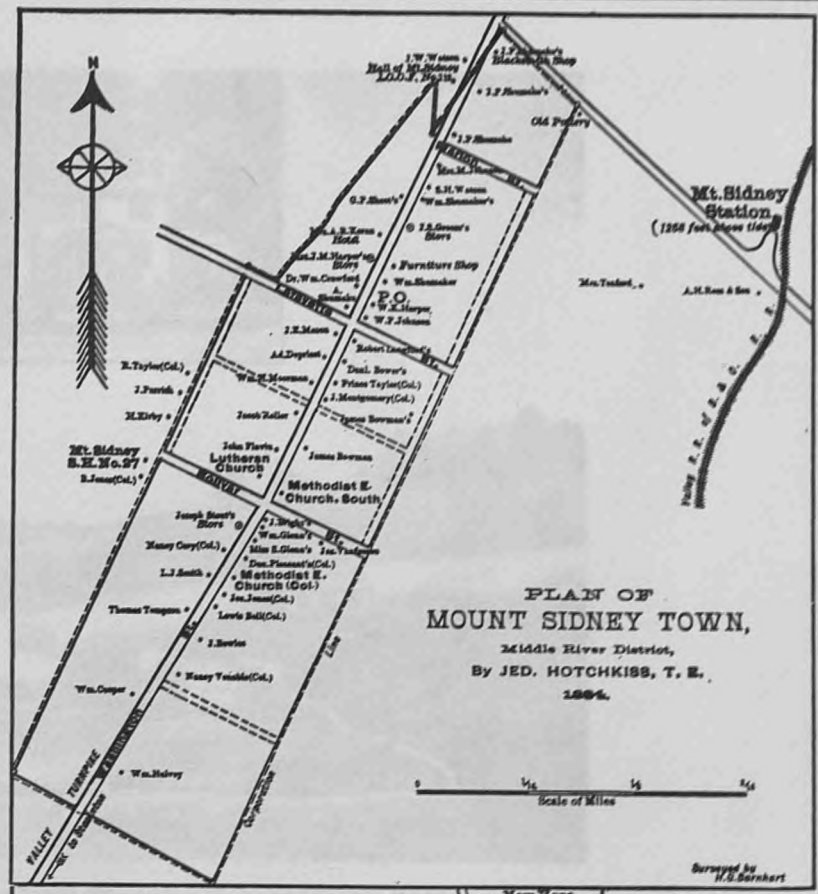
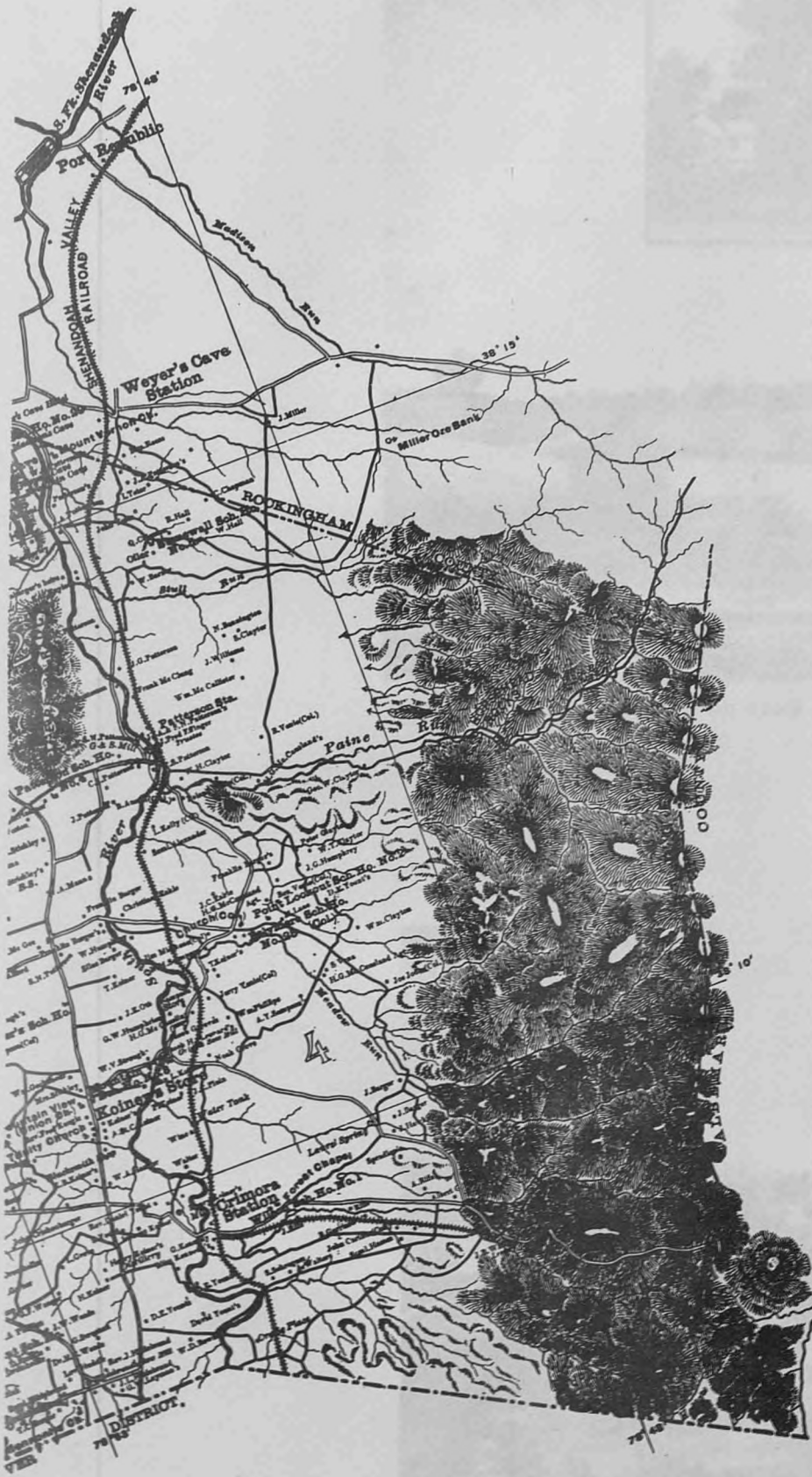
BY
JED. HOTCHKISS, T. E.

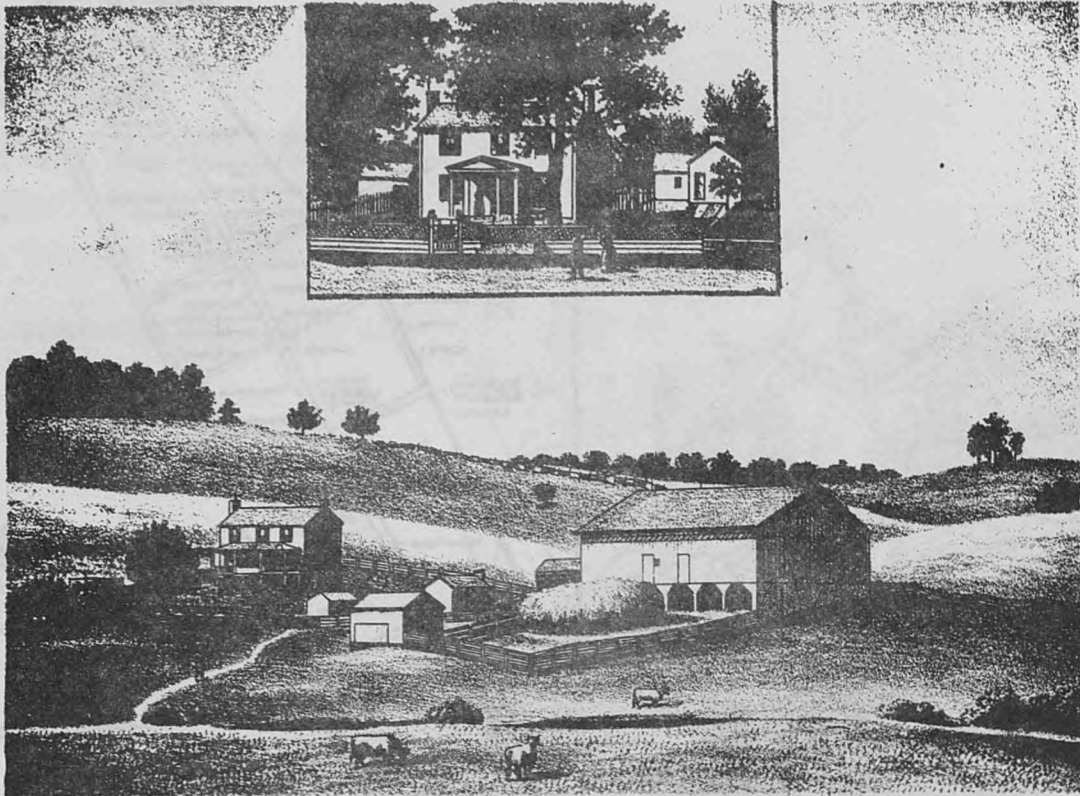
1884.



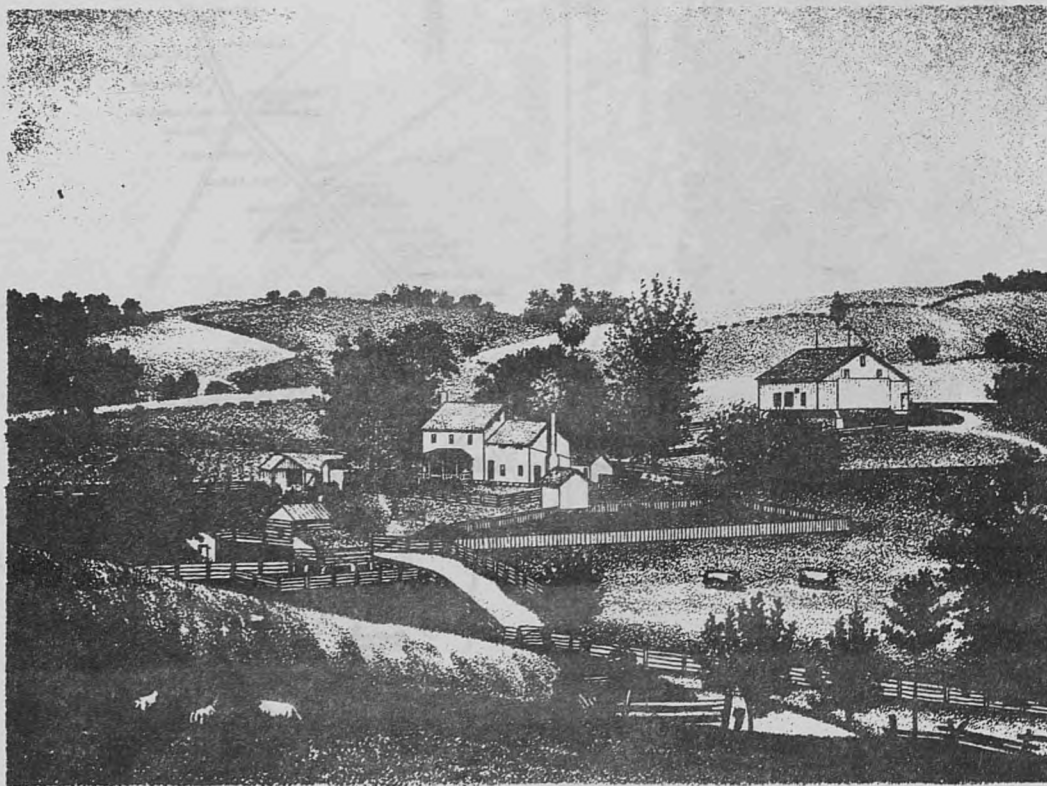
- Election Districts.**
No. 1. Mount Sidney.
" 2. Mount Meridian.
" 3. New Hope.
" 4. Red Mills.
" 5. Verona.







FARM PROPERTY OF R. B. DUNLAP, NORTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



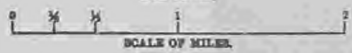
"CEDAR LANE FARM."
RESIDENCE OF CYRUS BROWN, NORTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



MAP OF
 North River Magisterial Dist.
 AUGUSTA COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

—BY—
 JED. HOTCHKISS, T. E.

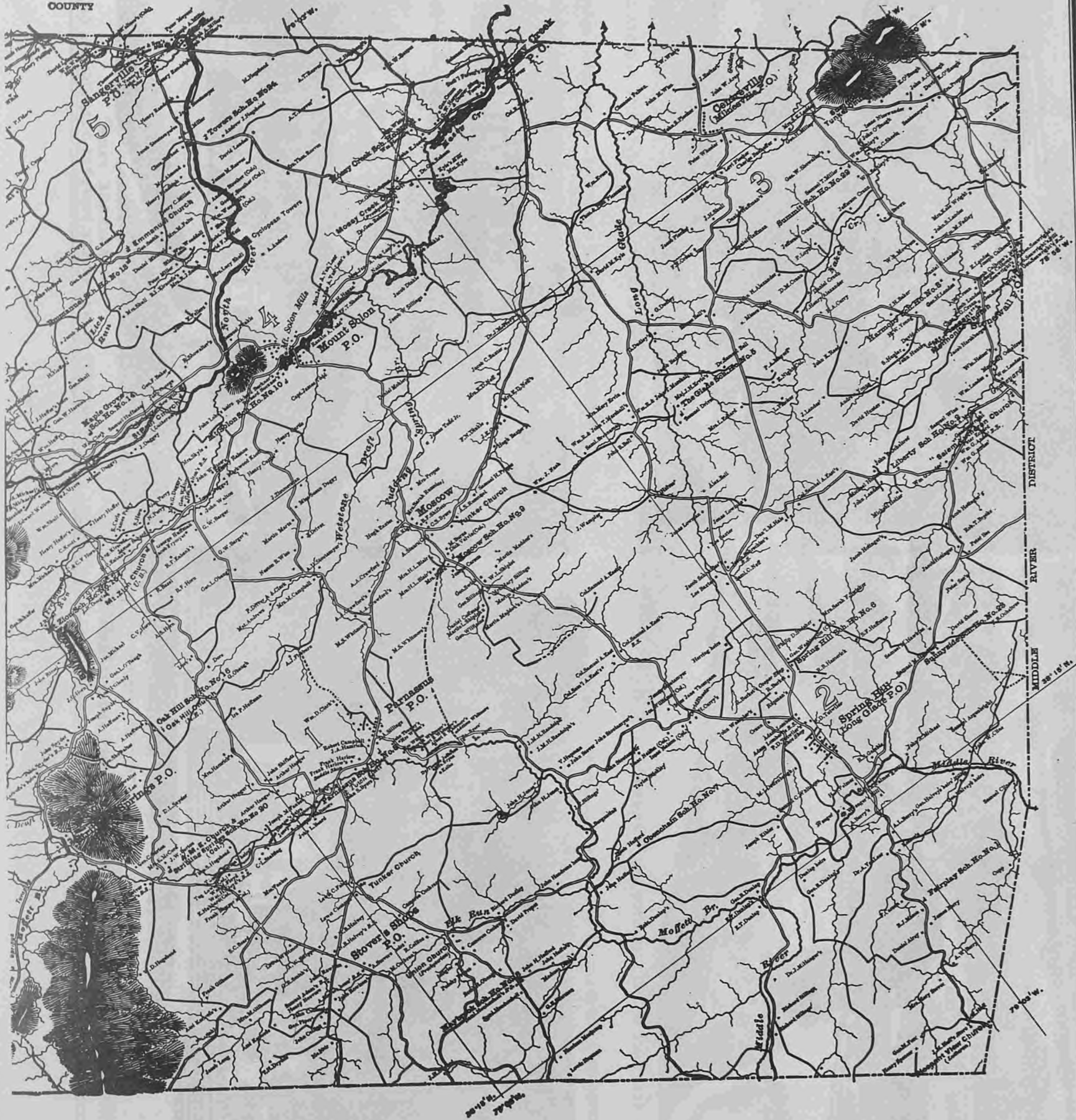
1884.



ELECTION DISTRICTS.

1. Farnassus.
2. Spring Hill.
3. Centreville.
4. Mount Solon.
5. Sangerville.

THE PASTURES DISTRICT



MIDDLE RIVER DISTRICT

MIDDLE RIVER

79° 00' W

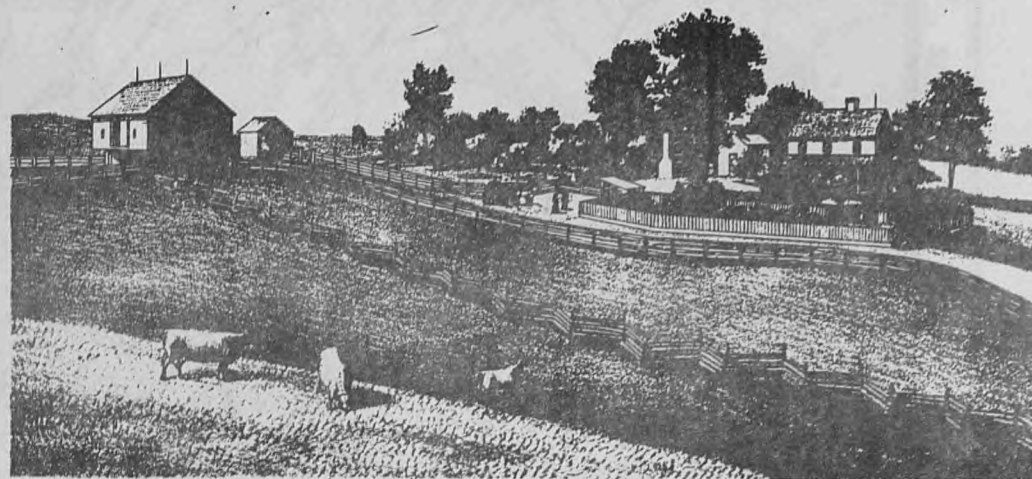
79° 15' W

38° 15' N

38° 30' N



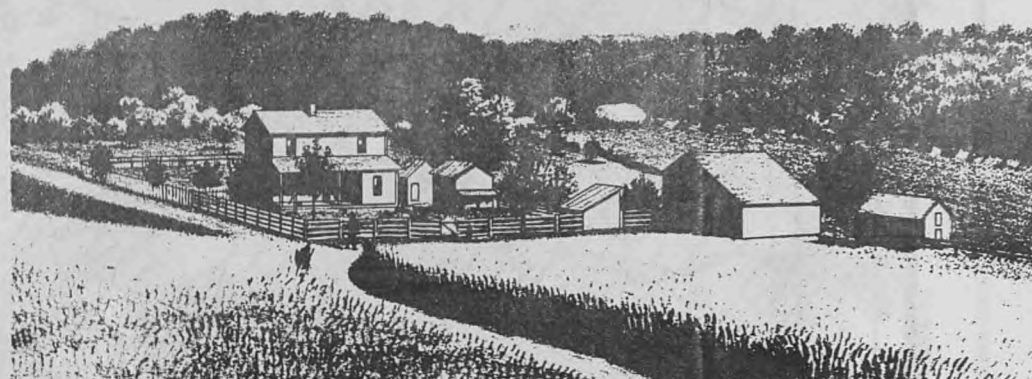
RESIDENCE OF JNO. E. HAMILTON, SOUTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF JOHN W. LANDES, MIDDLE RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



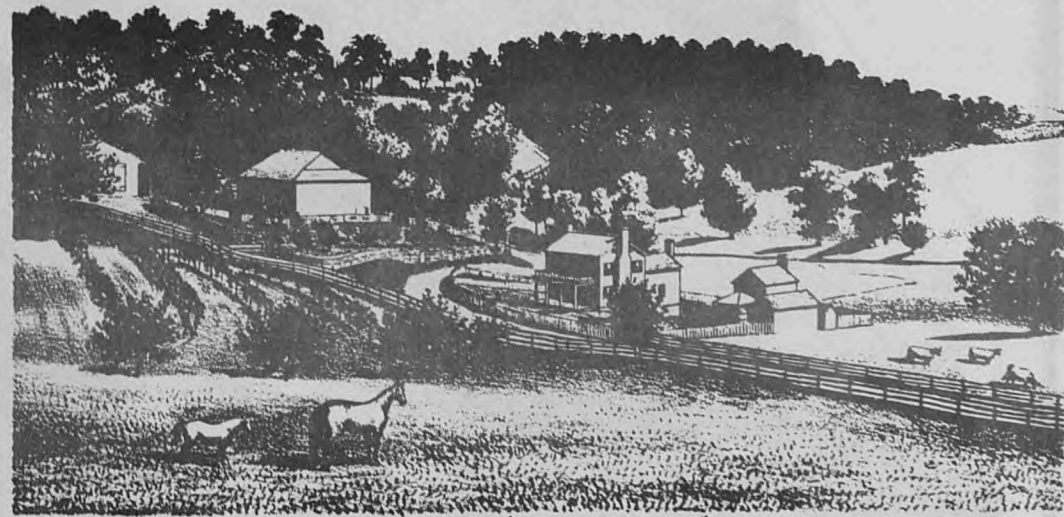
RESIDENCE OF J. M. YATES, BEVERLEY MANOR DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



"HORSESHOE FARM."
PROPERTY OF H. H. HANGER, PASTURES DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



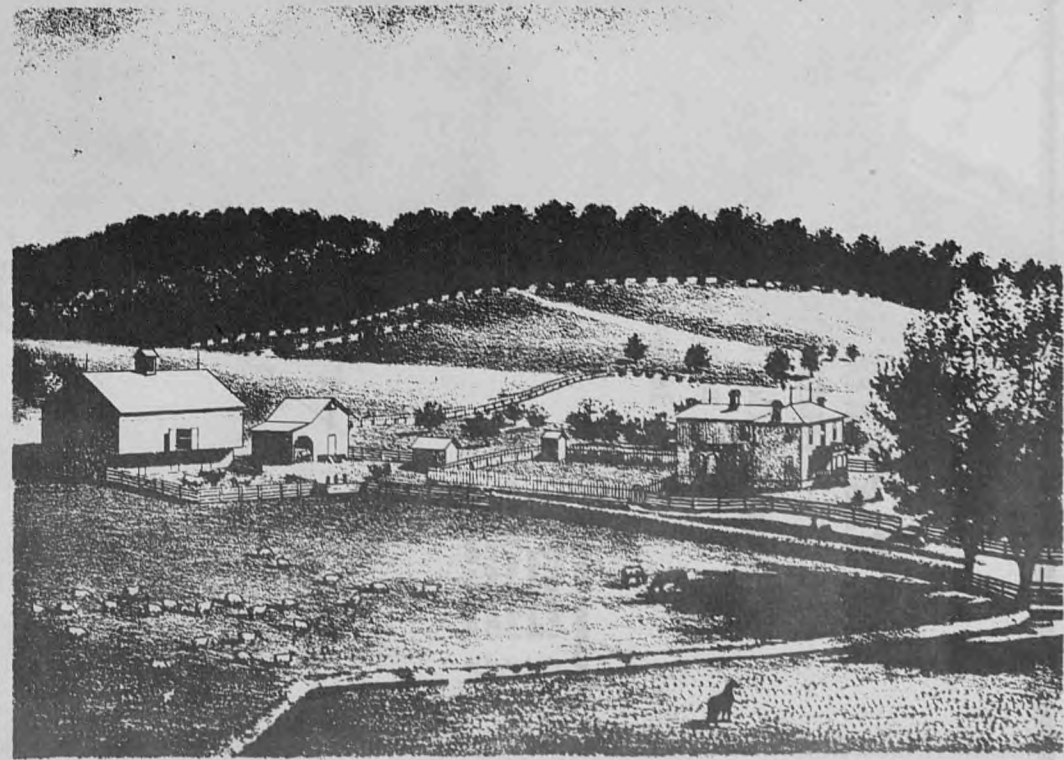
RESIDENCE OF GEO. W. FAUBER, RIVER-HEADS DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



"RANDOLPH'S FRONTIER."
RESIDENCE OF J. M. H. RANDOLPH, NORTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



RESIDENCE OF GEO. C. MISH, RIVER-HEADS DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.



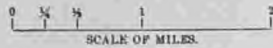
RESIDENCE OF R. H. DUDLEY, NORTH RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.

MAP OF
THE PASTURES MAGISTERIAL
DISTRICT,

Augusta County, Virginia.

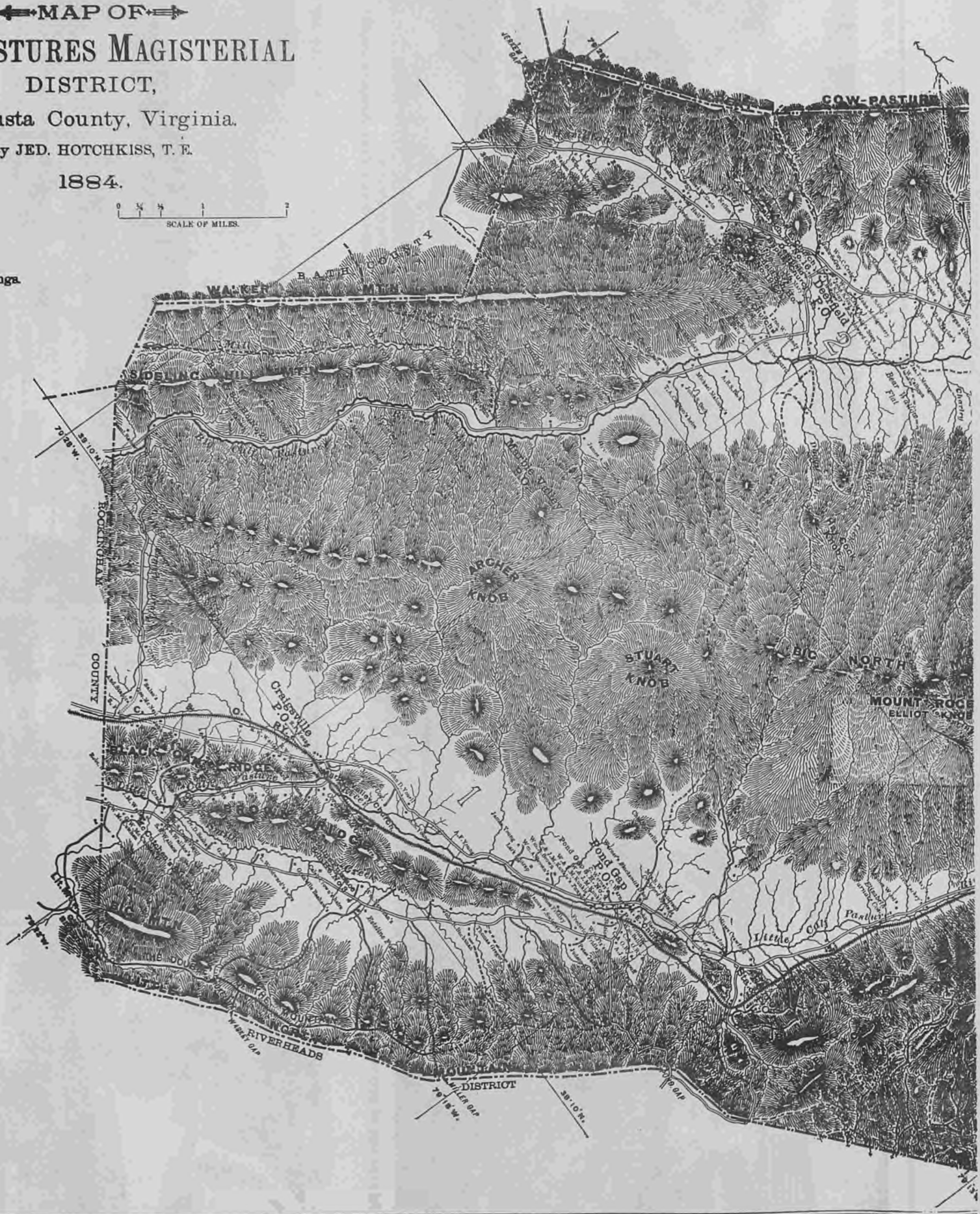
By JED. HOTCHKISS, T. E.

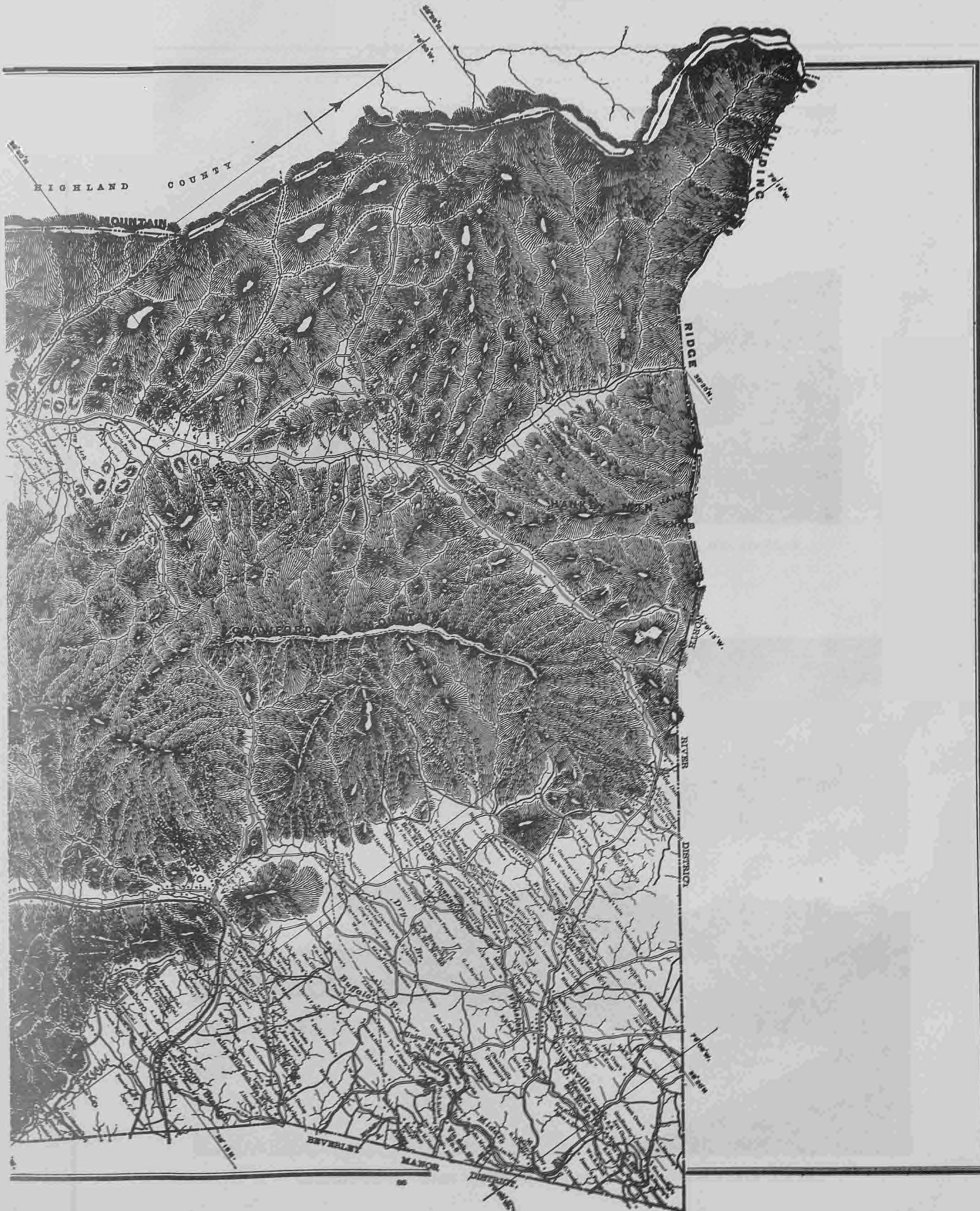
1884.

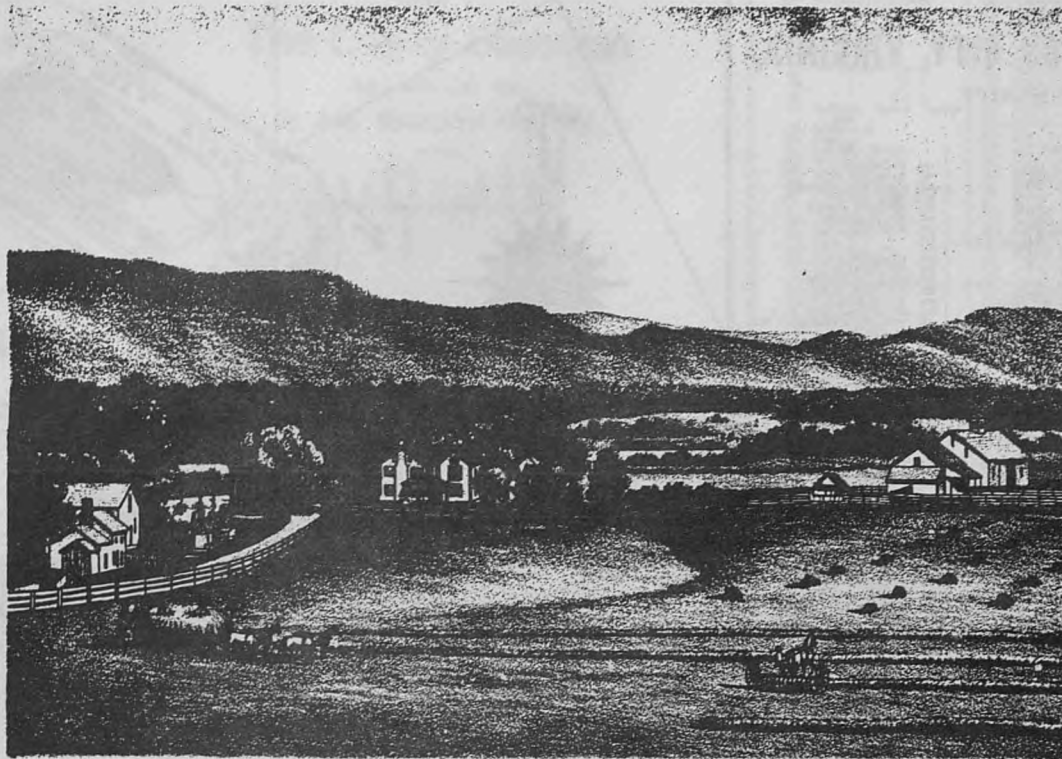


ELECTION DISTRICTS.

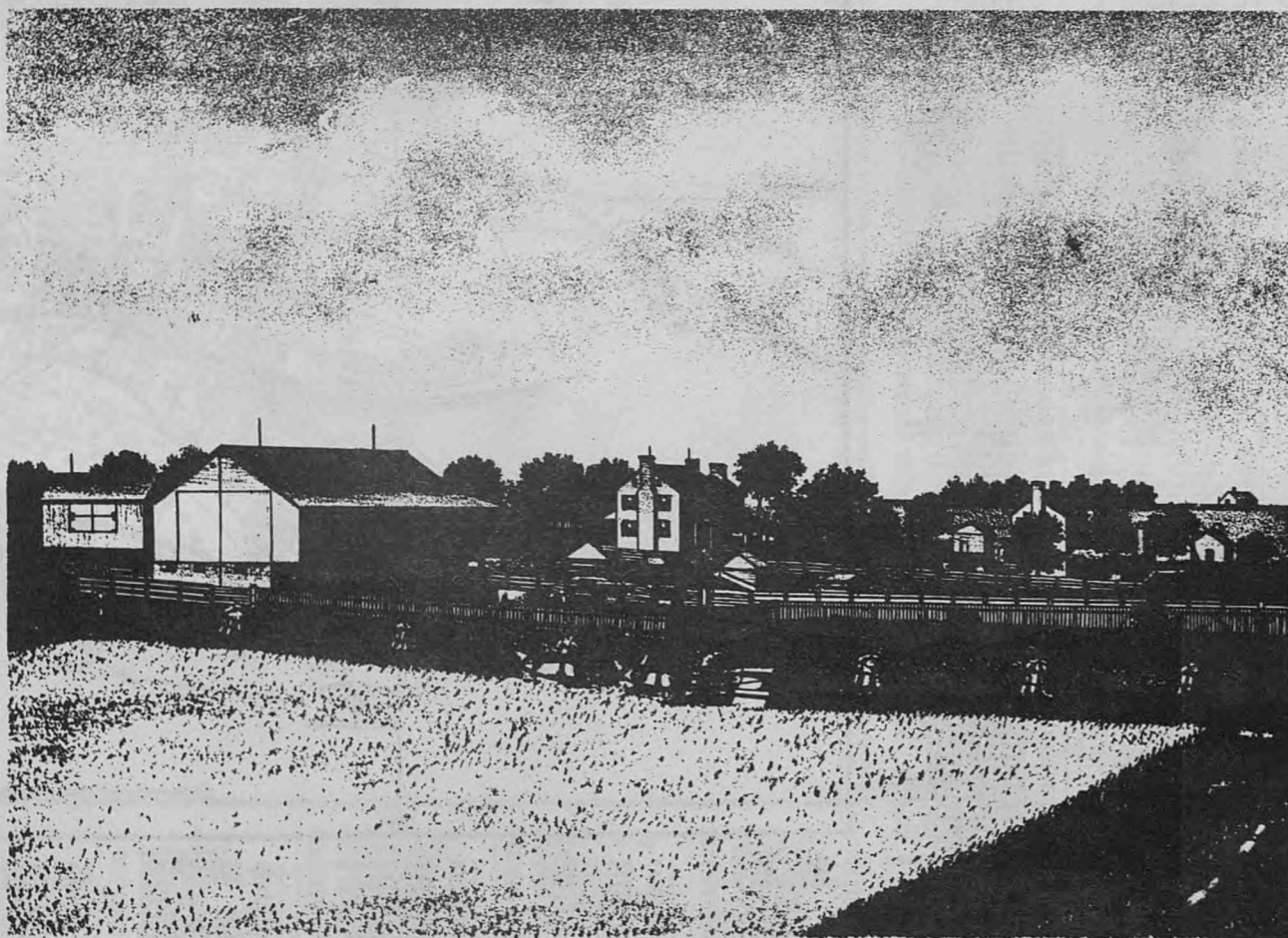
1. Craigsville.
2. Deerfield.
3. Lebanon Springs.
4. Churchville.
5. Buffalo Gap.



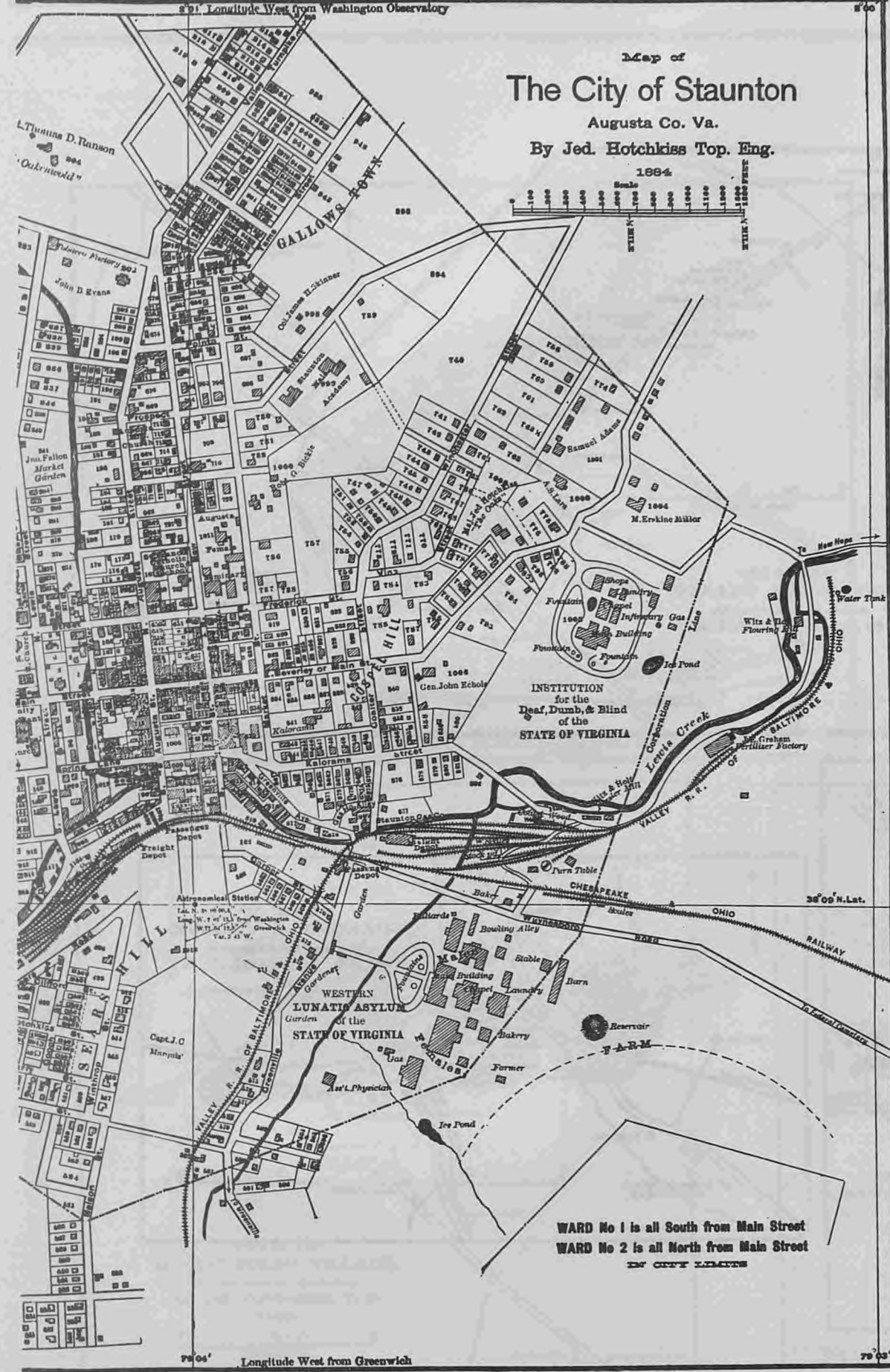




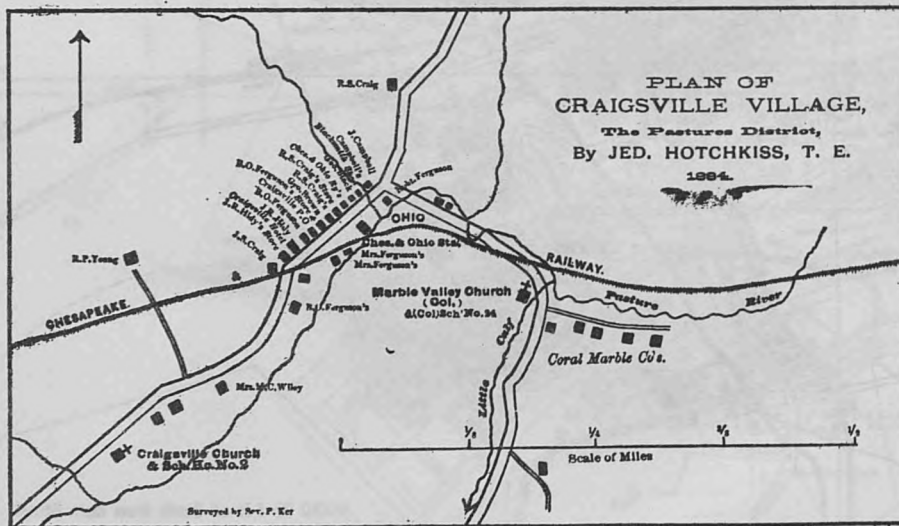
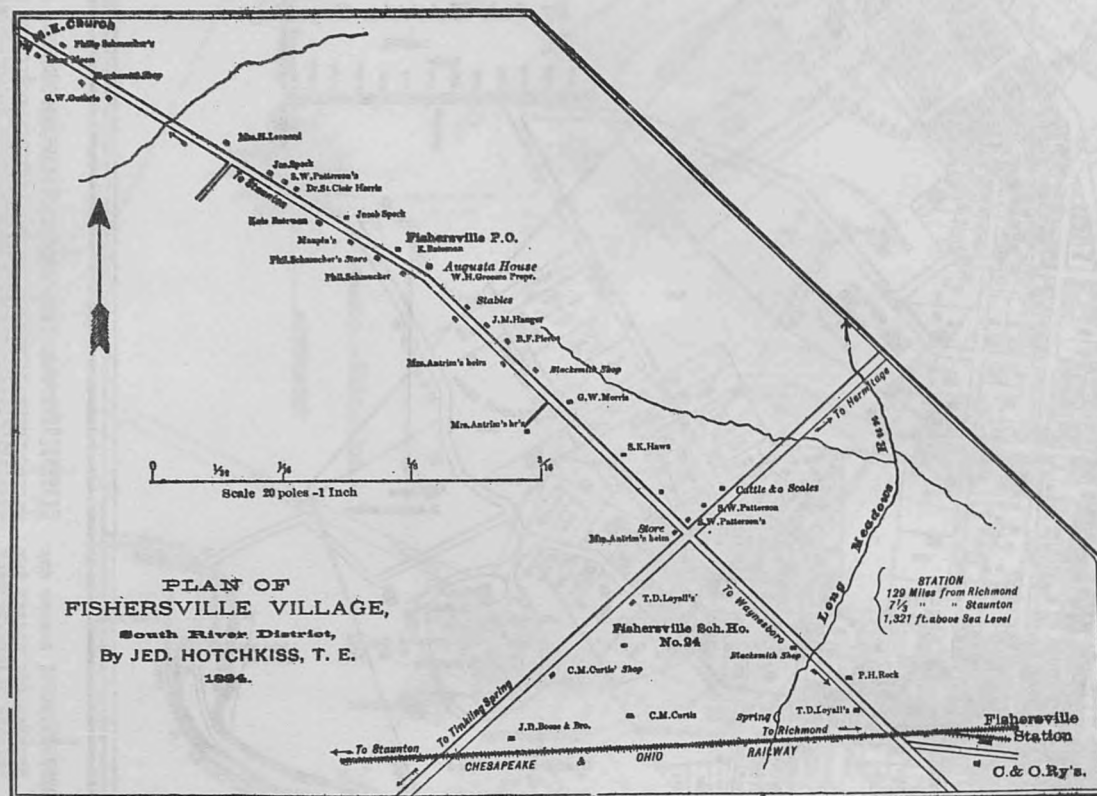
"HARRISTON," RESIDENCE OF C. S. PATTERSON, MIDDLE RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.

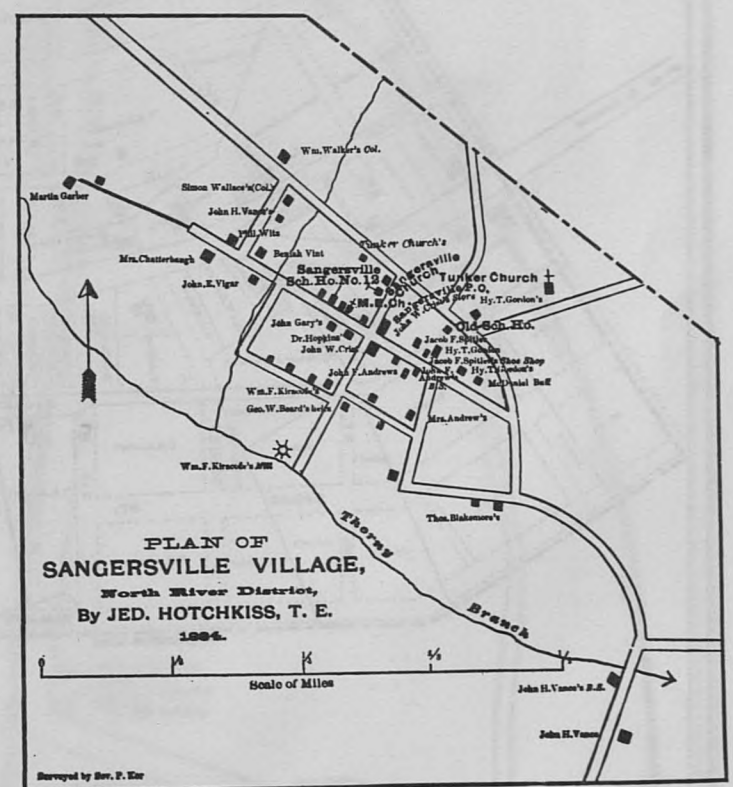
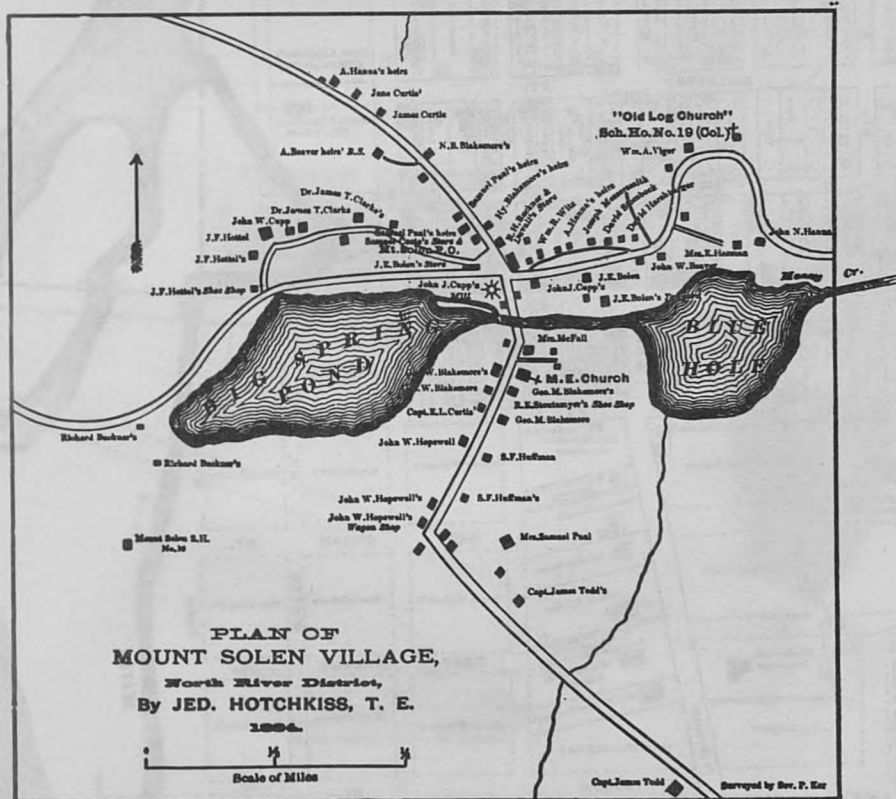
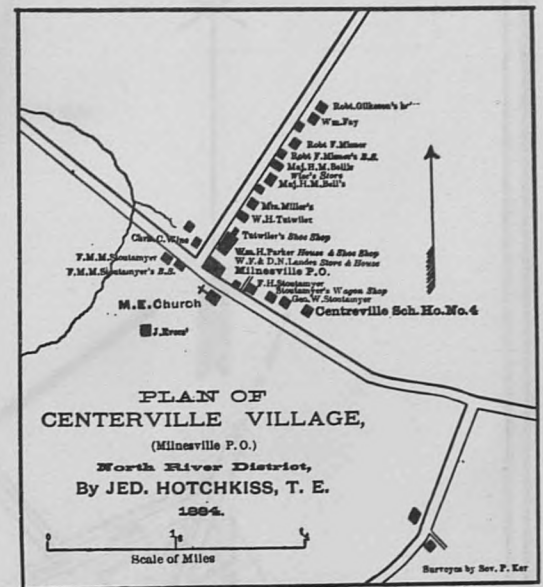
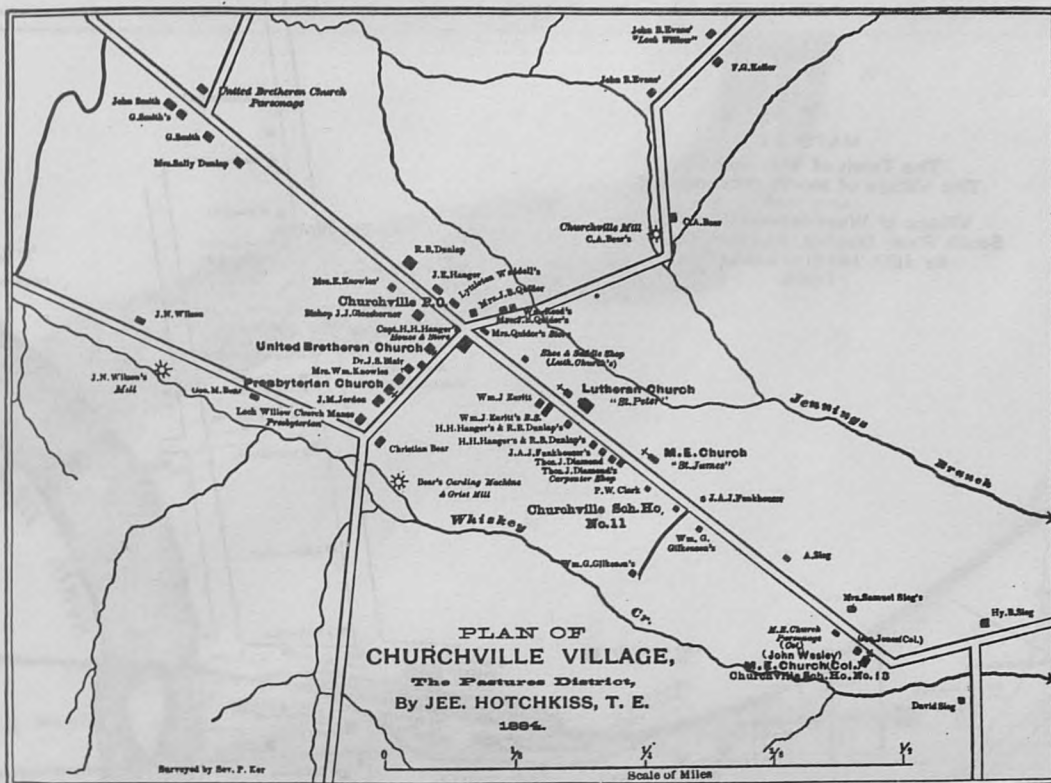


RESIDENCE OF ISAAC COFFMAN, MIDDLE RIVER DIST, AUGUSTA CO., VA.

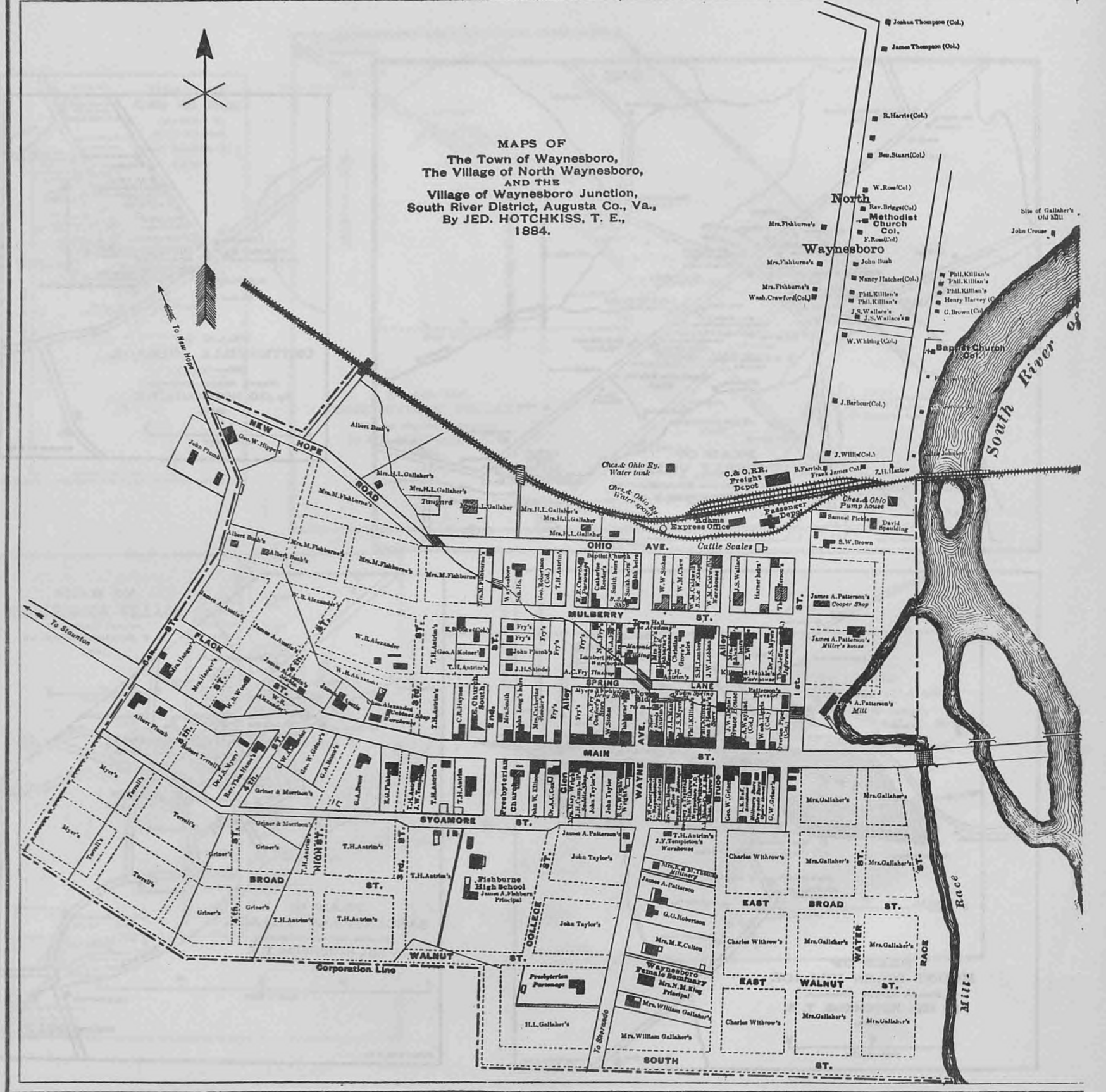


- Map of
The City of Staunton
Augusta Co. Va.
By Jed. Hotchkiss Top. Eng.
1884
- Scale 0 500 1000 1500 FEET
- Longitude West from Washington Observatory
- Longitude West from Greenwich
- WARD No 1 is all South from Main Street
WARD No 2 is all North from Main Street
- IN CITY LOTS
- | | | | | | | | | | | |
|--|---|--|---|--|--|---|---|---|---|---|
| <p>185. Harris, J. (Col'd.)</p> <p>186. Hove, James H.</p> <p>187. Hovick, Maj. Jed. "The Duke"</p> <p>188. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>189. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>190. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>191. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>192. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>193. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>194. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>195. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>196. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>197. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>198. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>199. Harriett's, Geo.</p> <p>200. Harriett's, Geo.</p> | <p>199. Hageman's, E.</p> <p>200. Harris, Thomas.</p> <p>I.</p> <p>1. Independent Order of Odd Fellows and Dr. J. N. Way (a Bro. use W.)</p> <p>2. Irving, Mrs. Mary</p> <p>3. James, Mrs. Charles</p> <p>4. Johnson, Joseph (Col'd.)</p> <p>5. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>6. Johnson, John J.</p> <p>7. Jones, Wm. (Col'd.)</p> <p>8. Johnson, Charlotte (Col'd.)</p> <p>9. Jones, F. Maitland</p> <p>10. Jones, John</p> <p>11. Jones, Mrs.</p> <p>12. Johnson, Joseph (Col'd.)</p> <p>13. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>14. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>15. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>16. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>17. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>18. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>19. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> <p>20. Johnson, O. F. (Col'd.)</p> | <p>21. Johnson, Edward</p> <p>22. Johnson, James (Col'd.)</p> <p>23. Johnson, Mrs. M. J.</p> <p>24. Johnson, Mrs. N.</p> <p>25. Johnson, T.</p> <p>26. Johnson, T.</p> <p>27. Johnson, T.</p> <p>28. Johnson, T.</p> <p>29. Johnson, T.</p> <p>30. Johnson, T.</p> <p>31. Johnson, T.</p> <p>32. Johnson, T.</p> <p>33. Johnson, T.</p> <p>34. Johnson, T.</p> <p>35. Johnson, T.</p> <p>36. Johnson, T.</p> <p>37. Johnson, T.</p> <p>38. Johnson, T.</p> <p>39. Johnson, T.</p> <p>40. Johnson, T.</p> | <p>41. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>42. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>43. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>44. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>45. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>46. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>47. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>48. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>49. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>50. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>51. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>52. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>53. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>54. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>55. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>56. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>57. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>58. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>59. Kalgibly, Richard</p> <p>60. Kalgibly, Richard</p> | <p>61. Kidwell, C. W.</p> <p>62. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>63. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>64. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>65. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>66. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>67. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>68. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>69. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>70. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>71. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>72. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>73. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>74. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>75. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>76. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>77. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>78. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>79. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>80. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> | <p>81. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>82. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>83. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>84. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>85. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>86. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>87. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>88. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>89. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>90. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>91. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>92. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>93. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>94. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>95. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>96. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>97. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>98. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>99. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>100. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> | <p>101. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>102. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>103. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>104. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>105. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>106. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>107. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>108. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>109. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>110. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>111. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>112. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>113. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>114. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>115. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>116. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>117. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>118. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>119. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>120. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> | <p>121. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>122. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>123. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>124. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>125. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>126. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>127. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>128. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>129. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>130. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>131. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>132. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>133. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>134. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>135. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>136. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>137. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>138. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>139. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>140. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> | <p>141. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>142. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>143. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>144. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>145. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>146. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>147. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>148. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>149. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>150. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>151. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>152. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>153. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>154. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>155. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>156. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>157. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>158. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>159. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>160. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> | <p>161. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>162. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>163. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>164. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>165. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>166. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>167. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>168. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>169. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>170. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>171. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>172. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>173. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>174. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>175. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>176. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>177. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>178. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>179. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>180. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> | <p>181. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>182. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>183. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>184. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>185. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>186. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>187. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>188. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>189. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>190. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>191. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>192. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>193. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>194. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>195. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>196. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>197. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>198. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>199. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> <p>200. Kinsey, J. C. Tremble</p> |
|--|---|--|---|--|--|---|---|---|---|---|





MAPS OF
 The Town of Waynesboro,
 The Village of North Waynesboro,
 AND THE
 Village of Waynesboro Junction,
 South River District, Augusta Co., Va.,
 By JED. HOTCHKISS, T. E.,
 1884.



- Joshua Thompson (Col.)
- James Thompson (Col.)
- R. Harris (Col.)
- Ben. Stuart (Col.)
- W. Row (Col.)
- Rev. Briggs (Col.)
- Methodist Church Col.
- F. Row (Col.)
- John Bush
- Nancy Hatcher (Col.)
- Phil. Killian's
- Phil. Killian's
- Henry Harvey (Col.)
- G. Brown (Col.)
- J.S. Wallace's
- J.S.W. Wallace's
- W. Whiting (Col.)
- J. Barbour (Col.)
- J. Willis (Col.)
- Baptist Church Col.
- John Crouse
- Site of Gallaher's Old Mill
- Phil. Killian's
- Phil. Killian's
- Henry Harvey (Col.)
- G. Brown (Col.)
- J.S. Wallace's
- J.S.W. Wallace's

North
 Waynesboro

South River of Shenandoah

Waynesboro

Ohio Ave.

Mulberry St.

Spring Lane

Main St.

Wayne St.

East Broad St.

East Walnut St.

South St.



To Staunton

To Staunton

To Staunton

To Staunton

To Staunton

To Staunton

To Staunton

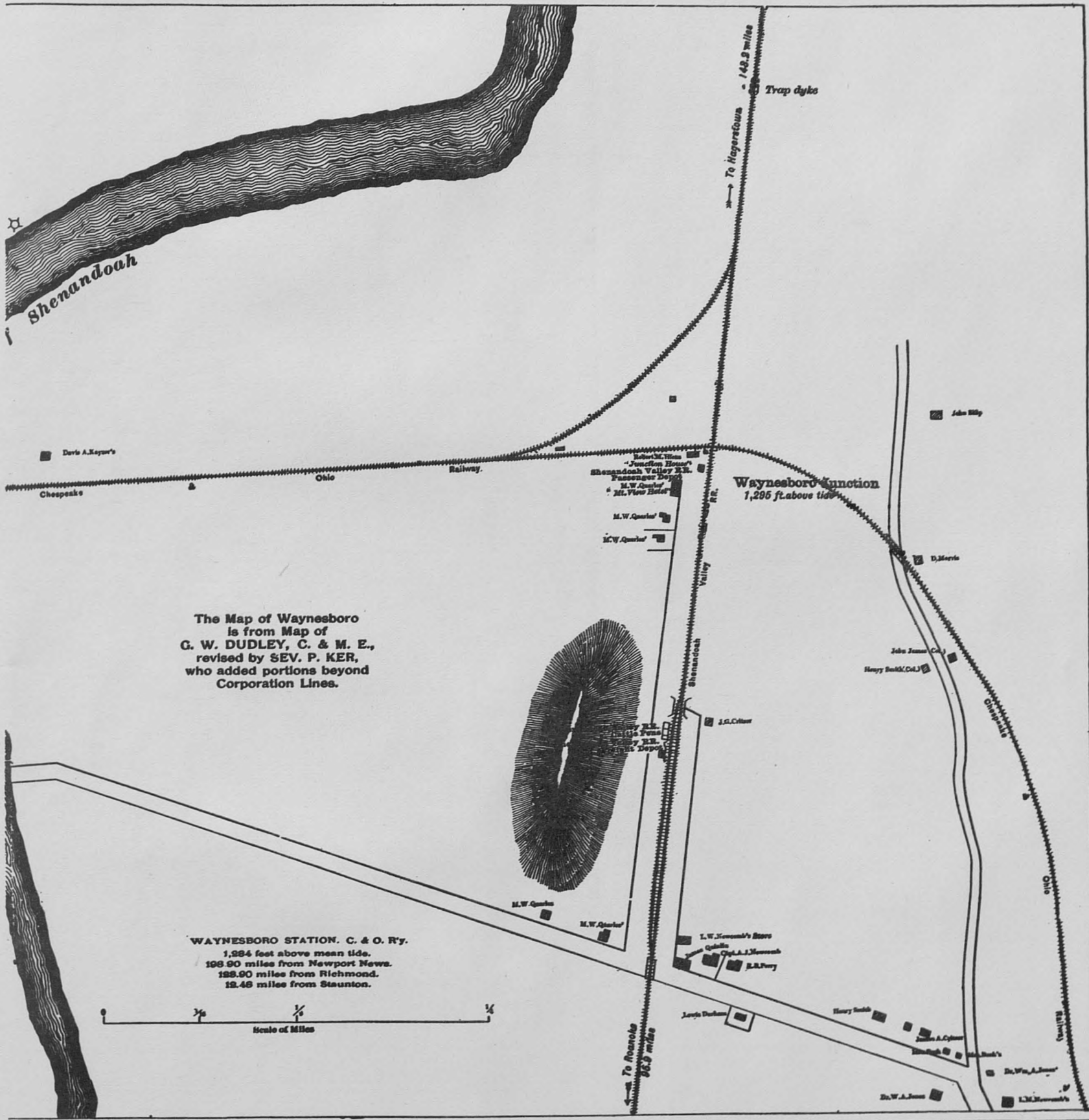
To Staunton

To Staunton

To Staunton

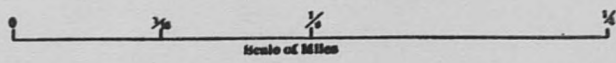
To Staunton

To Staunton



The Map of Waynesboro
 is from Map of
 G. W. DUDLEY, C. & M. E.,
 revised by SEV. P. KER,
 who added portions beyond
 Corporation Lines.

WAYNESBORO STATION. C. & O. Ry.
 1,284 feet above mean tide.
 108.90 miles from Newport News.
 188.90 miles from Richmond.
 12.46 miles from Staunton.



148.9 miles

Trap dykes

To Hagerstown

Waynesboro Junction
 1,295 ft. above tide

John Wiley

D. Morris

John James Col. J.

Henry Smith Col. J.

J. G. Carter

M. W. Quarter

M. W. Quarter

L. W. Swannick's Store

Quailie

Chas. A. J. Mendenhall

R. R. Perry

Lucy Durham

Henry Smith

John A. Cypher

Wm. Smith

Dr. Wm. A. Jones

Dr. W. A. Jones

L. M. Mendenhall

To Roundsville
 83.8 miles

Ohio

Chesapeake

Shenandoah

Waynesboro